

TRAVELS
INTO SEVERAL
Remote NATIONS
OF THE
WORLD.

By Capt. LEMUEL GULIVER.

Faithfully Abridged.



L O N D O N:

Printed for J. STONE, against Bedford Row, and
R. KING, at the Prince's-Arms in St. Paul's
Church-Yard. MDCCXXVII.



THE
OF THE
Publisher of the Abingdon
VOLUME
READER



celebrated Author, as well as
former Compiler of the
present Edition, were
a faithful Abingdon
it would follow the
with
than
liab
chan
thof



T H E
Publisher of the Abridgment,
T O T H E
R E A D E R.

AS the Original of Capt. Gulliver's Travels, is generally complain'd of, as too expensive; and may, without Injury to the celebrated Author, be reduced into a narrower Compass; the Undertakers of the present Edition, were led to think, that a faithful Abridgment of this History, as it would lessen the Expence, might meet with Acceptance. It must be confessed, that Undertakings of this Nature are liable to Exceptions; and are frequently charg'd with depriving the Original of those Ornaments which recommend it to

P R E F A C E.

the Judicious ; because many of them, through ill Management, have neither answered the Intention of the Author, or Satisfaction of the Reader : But we hope this under Consideration, will answer the Ends of both. It is true, that some Passages in the Original, which the Generality of Mankind have thought immodest and indecent, are entirely omitted, and many trivial Circumstances contracted into a very narrow Compass : But, at the same Time, we may truly say, that Care hath been taken to make the History as uniform, and the Connexion as just and smooth, as the Nature of the Performance would allow.

N. B. We think it necessary, to take Notice in this Place, That, since the beginning of this Work, the Proprietor of the Original, having conceiv'd himself injur'd by the Undertaking, has made several indirect Attempts to put a Stop to it, upon a wild Supposition that it was the very Copy, and not an Abridgment, (tho' he had not seen a Twelfth Part of the Work) even contrary to his own Assurances, that he would refer it to Arbitration, and wish
it

P R E F A C E.

it Success, if it should prove to be an Abridgment; and having pleaded such Exemptions in his own Favour, that he himself, in like Cases, never thought any Body else intitled to; we shall briefly enumerate a few of the many Instances, wherein the Practice of Abridgments has been follow'd, and, as it were, establish'd, by Custom and the Example of several considerable Men in the Book-selling Trade, Viz.

The Philosophical Transactions, for 20 Years, abridg'd by Mr. B. Motte.
Mr. Locke's Essay on Human Understanding.

The Statutes at large.

The State Tryals.

Collier's Dictionary.

Cambden's Britannia.

L'Estrange's Josephus.

Religion of Nature delineated.

Bp. Burnet's History of his own Times.

Mr. Bingham's Antiquities.

Dugdale's Monasticon Anglicanum.

The History of England, in 4 Vols.

Kettlewell of Obedience.

Coggeshall's Art of Measuring.

Robinson Crusoe's Adventures.

Many

P R E F A C E.

Many others might be added, but those above are thought sufficient to convince any young Bookseller, what the Practice has been, where the Books have been put at an extraordinary Price to the Publick, either from the Bulk of the Work, or the Art and Avarice of the Proprietor.



THE
CONTENTS.

CHAP. I.

The Author's Account of himself and Family. His first Inducements to Travel. After being Shipwreck'd, he gets safe on Shore in Lilliput, &c.

CHAP. II.

The Emperor of Lilliput comes to see the Author, &c. Learned Men appointed to teach him the Language. He gains Favour by his Mildness. His Pockets searched, &c.

CHAP. III.

He diverts the Emperor in an uncommon Manner. The Diversions of the Court describ'd. Liberty granted him upon certain Conditions, &c.

CHAP.

C O N T E N T S.

C H A P. IV.

The Metropolis of Lilliput describ'd, with the Imperial Palace. A Conversation concerning the Affairs of that Empire. He offers to serve the Emperor in his Wars.

C H A P. V.

By a Stratagem he prevents an Invasion. A Title is conferr'd on him. The Emperor of Blefuscu sues for Peace. The Author instrumental in extinguishing a Fire in the Empress's Apartment.

C H A P. VI.

The Learning, Laws, and Customs, of Lilliput. The Education they give their Children. The Author's Way of living. He vindicates a great Lady.

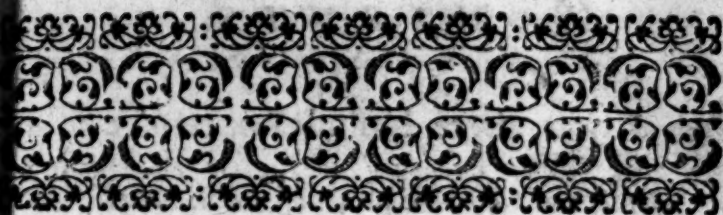
C H A P. VII.

A Design being form'd against the Author, he escapes to Blefuscu. His Reception there.

C H A P. VIII.

After some Difficulties he returns to his own Country.

T H E



TRAVELS.

PART I.

A Voyage to LILLIPUT.

CHAP. I.

*The Author's Relation of Himself and Family.
His first Inducements to Travel. After
being Shipwreck'd, he swims for his Life;
gets safe on Shore in the County of Lilliput.
Made Prisoner, and carry'd up the Country.*



MY Father, though a Man of no great Fortune, in *Nottinghamshire*, had that Care in the Education of his Children, that at the Age of Fourteen he sent me to *Emanuel College* in *Cambridge*, where I continued, till, through some Alteration in his Affairs, he thought proper to remove me to *London*.

don. I was there bound Apprentice to a Surgeon, Mr. *James Bates*, for the Space of Four Years; at the Expiration of which, for Three Years, I improv'd myself in the Study of Physick, at *Leyden*.

On my return Home, I obtain'd to be Surgeon of the *Swallow* Man of War, and made several Voyages in her to the *Levant*, and other Parts: But marrying as soon as I came from Abroad, I resolv'd to settle and follow my Profession; this I did, till Business failing through loss of Friends, especially my Master, I was oblig'd, a second time, to go to Sea, and made several Voyages to the *East* and *West-Indies*. The Hopes I had of Business, from my Acquaintance among the Seamen, made me settle in *Wapping* at my return Home: But this not answering Expectation, I undertook a Voyage to the *South-Seas*, which prov'd prosperous for some Time. It is not proper, for some Reasons, to be particular in our Adventures in those Seas. We set sail thence to the *East-Indies*, and, in our Passage, after the Loss of many of our Crew, we found our selves to the North-West of *Van Diemen's Land*, in the Latitude $30^{\circ} 2'$ South.

On the 5th of *November*, the Beginning of Summer, in that Country, we split on a Rock, and but Six of the Crew, of whom

to LILLIPUT. 3

whom I was one, made shift to get in the Boat. We row'd till hard Labour had so exhausted our Strength, that we submitted to the Mercy of the Waves. Half an Hour was scarce expired, but the Boat was over-set, and every Man obliged to shift for himself. What became of my Companions I know not, but, as good Fortune would have it, as I was almost spent with swimming, I found my self within my Depth. Being thus happily landed, I walk'd a Mile before I reach'd the Shore, and then finding no Signs of Houses or Inhabitants, and being thoroughly fatigued, I slept on the Ground till next Morning: When I awaked, I was surprized to find my self so fastened to the Ground that I could not rise. At length I heard a confused Noise about me, but in the Posture I lay, being on my Back, could see nothing. In a little time, I felt something come up to my Chin, in the Shape of an Human Creature, not six Inches long, with a Bow and Arrow in his Hand, and a Quiver at his Back. Immediately I felt so many of the same Species upon me, that in Consternation roaring out, they leapt from me upon the Ground. One more bold than the rest ventur'd to return, and looking me full in the Face, cry'd, with a shrill Accent, *Hekinab Degul*: the

others repeated the same. In struggling I got my left Arm loose, which they no sooner perceiv'd, than one of them cry'd, *Tolgo Phonac*, and presently follow'd such a Volley of small Darts, that pricked like so many Needles upon my Hands and Face. Some attempted to thrust Spears into my Sides, but they would not pierce my Buff Jerkin. I thought it most prudent to lie still till Night, before I attempted to get loose, but Fortune disposed otherwise of me. At a little Distance from me they erected a Stage, capable of holding four of the Inhabitants; it was about a Foot and an Half from the Ground: This they mounted with Ladders, from whence a Principal amongst them cry'd out, three times, *Langro Debul san*. Whereupon they immediately loosened my Head, which gave me an Opportunity of turning to view the Person on the Stage, who appear'd to be a Person of good Grace and Deportment. He made an Oration, in which I could perceive, by his Gestures, some Marks of Threats, others of Pity and Compassion. I answer'd with all the Signs of Submission I could, and signified that I wanted Food. The *Hurgo*, for so they called the Lord, understanding me, order'd Ladders to be set to my Sides, by which means the Inhabitants brought

brought Baskets of Provision to my Mouth. It was the Flesh of different Animals, well dress'd, but exceeding small, as was the Bread also : They seem'd much surprized at my Bulk and Appetite. I then made a Sign for something to drink : They flung me one of their largest Hogsheads, which I drank off at a Draught, and then a second, for they scarce held half a Pint each. The Wine was delicious, and I could have drank more of it if they had brought it me. They made me a Sign to throw down the empty Hogsheads after they had warned the People to stand out of the Way. I had often a Mind to seize Forty or Fifty of them as they passed backward and forward upon my Body, had not the Remembrance of the Darts, and Submission I had made, and their Hospitality towards me, prevented it : However, I could not sufficiently wonder at the Intrepidity of these diminutive Mortals, who durst venture to walk on the Body of a Creature so prodigious as I must appear to them. After some time there appear'd a Person of the first Rank, sent by his Imperial Majesty, who mounting on the Small of my Right Leg, with his Retinue, advanced up to my Face, and producing his Credentials, made a short Speech, signifying my Removal to the Capital City.

I made Signs that I should be glad of my Liberty; but he shook his Head, and held his Hand in a Posture to shew that I must be carry'd Prisoner, but should be civilly treated. The Smart I felt from the Arrows, on my Hands and Face, made me fear to risque attempting my Escape. I therefore gave Tokens of Submission to their Power: Upon this the *Hurgo*, and his Train withdrew. Soon after I heard a general Shout, with these Words, *Peplom Selan*, and I felt great Numbers of People loosing the Cords on my Left Side, so that I was able to ease my self by turning on the Right: But before this, they had dawbed my Face and Hands with an Ointment, which soon removed the Smart occasioned by the Arrows. This Circumstance, added to the Refreshment I had taken, disposed me to sleep: I slept about eight Hours, as I was afterwards told, and it was no Wonder, for, by the Emperor's Order, the Physicians had mingled a sleepy Potion with the Wine I had drank. It seems that from the very Moment they first discover'd me, all that had passed was resolved in Council, and that I should be removed, in a Machine, to the Capital City.

This Resolution, perhaps, may appear very bold and dangerous, and, I am confident,

fidest, would not be imitated by any Prince in *Europe* on the like Occasion ; however, in my Opinion, it was prudent as well as generous : For had they endeavour'd to kill me with their Darts and Spears, the Effects of the Pain would so far have rowzed my Rage and Strength as to have been able to break the Ties, after which, as they were unable to resist, so they could expect no Mercy.

The Emperor is so great an Encourager of Learning, that the People are arrived to great Perfection in the Mathematicks and Mechanicks ; they have Machines for the Carriage of Trees, and great Weights, and often build their largest Men of War in the Woods, whereof some are Nine Feet in Length, and convey them by Engines to Sea. Five Hundred Men were at Work to prepare the Engine I was to be carry'd on : It was Seven Feet long, Four wide, and Three Inches high. It was brought Parallel to me as I lay, and with much Difficulty, by the Assistance of 900 Men, and a vast Number of Pullies, I was at last raised and slung into the Engine, which was drawn by 1500 of the Emperor's largest Horses. After Four Hours Journey I awaked ; for the soporiferous Medicine had continued its Effect all the Time of my being removed into

the Carriage, by the oddest Accident imaginable. Two or three of the young Natives having the Curiosity to see how I look'd when I was asleep, one of them, an Officer of the Guard, thrust the End of his Half-Pike up my Nose, and made me sneeze violently; this, I was told, was the Cause of my waking so suddenly. We made a long March that Day, and rested at Night, with a strong Guard surrounding me. The next Day the Emperor, and his Court, came to meet us, within a small Distance of the Town. At the Place where the Carriage stopt, there stood a Temple, which had been applied to common Use, since its having been polluted by an unnatural Murder: In this it was determined I should lodge. The North Gate was Four Foot high, and two Foot wide, near which I was fastned by my Left Leg, with a large Number of small Chains. When they found I was so fast that I could not get loose, they cut the Cords that tied me, and immediately I rose up, to the Astonishment of the People about me.



C H A P. II.

The Emperor of Lilliput, with his Nobility, come to see the Author. His Person and Habit described. Learned Men are appointed to teach him the Language; who gains Favour by his mild Disposition. His Pockets are searched, and Sword and Pistols taken from him.



Looking around me as I stood, I beheld a most entertaining Prospect, from the Beauty and Regularity of the Fields and Gardens, which were agreeably bedeck'd with Flowers. The City, on my Left Hand, appear'd like the painted Scene of a City in a Theatre. Due Care was taken to keep my Apartment free from any Filth that might be occasion'd by the Necessities of Nature, which daily employ'd two of the Servants. As I was taking Air at the Gate, the Emperor, who was already descended from a Tower just by, and advancing towards me, had like to have been thrown from his Horse, which was affrighted at so unusual a Sight, had not his Attendants ran in and held the Bridle while he dismounted. When he alighted he survey'd

me with Admiration, and order'd his Servants to give me Victuals and Drink, which was brought in Wheel Machines, within my Reach. I soon emptied Twenty, which were fill'd with Meat, and Ten with Liquor. The Empress, with the rest of the Royal Family, sat at some Distance, in their Chairs, but alighted on Account of the Accident which happened to the Emperor's Horse, and came to him; whom I am now going to describe. He is taller than the rest of his Court, by the Length of my Nail, which strikes an Awe into his Beholders. His Features are strong, with an *Austrian* Lip, and arch'd Nose: His Complexion Olive; his Countenance erect; his Body, and Limbs, well proportion'd; his Motions, and Deportment, graceful and majestick. He was then Twenty-eight Years old, and had reign'd Seven successfully. I lay down, that I might the better see him: However, I have had him since often in my Hand, and, therefore, cannot be deceiv'd in the Description. His Dress between the *Asiatick* and *European*, with a Golden Helmet and Plume on the Crest. His Sword was in his Hand, whose Hilt and Scabbard was Gold, enrich'd with Diamonds. The Ladies and Courtiers were magnificently clad. His Majesty often spoke to me, and he

he commanded his Priests and Lawyers (as I guess'd by their Habits) to speak also, but I could not answer in any Language to be understood.

When the Court retired, a strong Guard was left to prevent the Insolence of the Rabble; one of whom narrowly missed hitting my left Eye with an Arrow. Six of those, who shot at me, were order'd to be brought bound to me to be punish'd; I put Five of them in my Pocket, and the Sixth I threatned to eat. He was terribly affrighted, especially when I pulled out my Penknife, which I made no other use of, than to cut the Strings which tied them, and then let them go one after the other. This Mark of Clemency was represented much to my Advantage at Court.

At Night I went into my House, where I had lain a Fortnight on the Ground: During which Time, by the Emperor's Order, they had prepared me a Bed, composed of some Hundreds of their own, with proper Coverlets to it. Although it indifferently kept me from the Hardness of Stones, it was tolerable for one enured to Hardships as I was. The News of my Arrival spreading, his Majesty, by Proclamation, order'd all those who had seen me, to return Home to their Affairs, and
not

not to come within Fifty Yards of my House, without Licence from the Secretary of State, which considerably encreased his Fees. The Emperor, and Court, in the mean Time, were under great Difficulties how they should act concerning me, as I was afterwards assured by a particular Friend. The Fear of my breaking loose, the Apprehensions of a Famine, from the Expence of my Diet, occasion'd Resolutions either to kill or starve me. But they apprehended the Stench of my Carcase might occasion a Plague, and probably infect the whole Kingdom. During these Debates, two Officers of the Army, who were admitted into the Council Chamber, gave an Account of my Clemency to the Prisoners deliver'd up to me, which made such an Impression, that his Imperial Majesty, issued out a Commission, obliging all the Villages 900 Yards round the City, to bring in, every Morning, Six Beeves, Forty Sheep, and other Food, for my Sustainance, with proportionate Quantities of Bread, Wine, and other Liquors; and gave Assignments on his Treasury for the Payment: For this Prince lives chiefly upon his own Demesnes, unless it be upon great Occasions, and his Subjects attend him in War at their own Expence. An Establishment of 600 Domesticks was made

made, who had Tents built on each Side of my Door ; and 300 Taylors were order'd to make me a Suit of Cloaths after the Fashion of the Country ; and six of the best Scholars to teach me the Language : And, lastly, that the Horfes of the Emperor, and Nobility, should be exercis'd in my Sight, to accustom themselves to me.

These Orders were duly executed. In three Weeks I made a great Progress in that Language, and was honoured sometimes by the Emperor's Instructions in it. The first of my Conversation began by craving my Liberty, which I daily repeated on my Knees. His Answer was, It could not be without the Advice of his Council, and that Peace must be first sworn to him and his Kingdom. He advised me, in the mean time, to be patient, and to acquire his good Opinion, and that of his Subjects, by my Conduct. He desired I would not take it ill if he sent Officers to search me, urging, That probably a Man of my Bulk might carry dangerous Weapons, if they answer'd my Stature. I told his Majesty I was ready to satisfy him. He replied, That by the Laws of the Kingdom, I must be searched by two Officers, which could not be done without my Consent and Assistance ; that he had that Opinion of my Justice, and Generosity,

Generosity, as to trust their Persons in my Hands; that whatsoever they took should be return'd, or paid for at my own Price. I took the Officers in my Hand, and put them into all my Pockets, except my two Fobs, where I had a Watch, and a little Money; and they having Pen, Ink, and Paper, took the following Inventory, which I afterwards translated into *English*.

Imprimis. In the right Coat-Pocket of the *Great Man Mountain* (for so I translate the Words *Quinbus Flestrin*) we found one great Piece of coarse Cloth, large enough to be a Foot-cloth for your Majesty's chief Room of State. In the left, a huge Silver Chest, which was Knee deep, full of Dust, which, flying up to our Faces, set us a sneezing. In the right Waistcoat Pocket, a large Bundle of thin Substances, folded one over another, and tied with a Cable, mark'd with black Figures like Writing, every Letter almost half as large as the Palm of our Hands. In the left, an Engine, from the Back of which were extended Twenty long Poles, resembling Pallisado's, wherewith he combs his Head. In the long Pocket, on the Right-Side of his Breeches, an hollow Pillar of Iron, of a Man's Length, fastned to a strong
Piece

Piece of Timber larger than the Pillar; and upon one Side of the Pillar were huge Pieces of Iron sticking out in different Figures. In the left Pocket, another of the same. In the smaller Pocket on the right Side, were several round Pieces of white and red Metal, some whereof appeared to be Silver, and so large, that we could hardly lift them. Out of the right Pocket, close to his Belly, hung a great Silver Chain; we directed him to draw out whatsoever was fasten'd to it, which appear'd to be a Globe, half Silver, half transparent Metal, under which are Figures circularly drawn. It makes an incessant Noise when put to the Ear. We suppose it to be his God, for this, he tells us, points out Time for all his Actions. Out of the left, he took a Net, large enough for a Fisherman, but serv'd for a Purse; in this were several yellow massy Pieces, which are of immense Value, if they are Gold. Having, thus in Obedience to your Majesty's Commands, search'd all his Pockets, we discover'd a Belt about his Waist, made of the Hide of some large Animal, to which hung a Sword of the Length of Five Men and a Boy; and a Pouch, which contain'd a Number of Globes, of a heavy Metal, of Two different Sizes.

This

This is an exact Inventory of what was found upon the *Man Mountain*. Sign'd and seal'd, on the 4th Day of the 89th Moon of your Majesty's glorious Reign.

Clefren Frelock, Marfi Frelock.

The Emperor having first order'd Three Thousand of his choicest Troops, with Bows and Arrows, to surround me, directed me to deliver up the Particulars of the Inventory. First, I drew my Scymiter, then return'd it into the Sabbard, and threw it on the Ground, at a little Distance before me. The next was one of the Pocket Pistols, which I drew out, and, to shew him the Use of it, charg'd it with a little Powder, which happen'd to escape the Wet. I first caution'd the Emperor not to be afraid, and then fir'd it in the Air. Their Astonishment was so great at the Report, that Hundreds fell down as if they had been kill'd; even the Emperor could not recover himself in some time, tho' he stood his Ground. Then I deliver'd my Pistols up, and the Pouch, giving him a Caution of the Gunpowder. Afterwards I gave them all the rest of my Goods; but he return'd me all but my Scymiter,

to LILLIPUT. 17

Scymiter, Pistols, and Watch: The last of which he was amaz'd at, both from the Noise, and the Motion of the Hand, which he observ'd. Two of the strongest Men carry'd it upon a Pole on their Shoulders; and my Scymiter and Pistols were convey'd in Carriages. I had a Pair of Spectacles, and Pocket Perspective, in a private Pocket, and a few other Conveniencies, which I did not discover, apprehending they might be spoiled, if I ventur'd them out of my Possession.





C H A P. III.

The Author becomes familiar with the Natives. He describes the Diversions of the Court of LILLIPUT; and diverts the Emperor and Nobility in a very uncommon Manner. The Author has his Liberty on certain Conditions.



MY Gentleness and good Behaviour had so far gain'd on the Emperor and his People, that they were under no Apprehensions of Danger from me; the very Children would frequently come and play about me, and dance in my Hand. I had now made a good Progress in speaking the Language.

The Emperor had a Mind to divert me with the Shows of the Country, in which they exceed all other Nations in the World, for Dexterity and Magnificence. They are particularly famous for Rope-dancing; which Diversion is only practis'd by those who stand Candidates for high Employ-

Employments. They are train'd up to it from their Youth, and are not always of high Birth or Extraction: And whosoever of the Candidates excells in this Art, succeeds in the vacant Office. The chief Ministers are often commanded to shew their Skill, to convince the Emperor they retain their Faculty. *Flimnap*, the Treasurer, I have seen perform Wonders. *Reldresal*, the Secretary of State for private Affairs, is second to him; and the rest of the great Officers are much upon a Par. These Diversions are often attended with broken Limbs, especially upon the Emulation amongst the Prime Ministers. The dexterous *Flimnap* had once broke his Neck, had he not fell upon one of the King's Cushions, which accidentally lay on the Ground. There is another Diversion, which is shewn only before the Emperor, the Empress, and the first Minister, when his Majesty has a Mind to give some peculiar Mark of his Favour. The Prizes are Three Silken Threads, One Purple, One Yellow, and the Third White. The Candidates are to shew their Dexterity, by leaping over, and creeping under a Stick, which the Emperor holds in his Hand, parallel to the Horizon. Sometimes the Prime Minister holds one End of it; sometimes he has it entirely to himself. The most active is rewarded

rewarded with the Purple, the next with the Yellow, and the Third with the White, which they all wear girt twice round the Middle. You see few Persons of Distinction about the Court who are not adorn'd with one of these Girdles. The Horses of the Army were no longer shy; the Riders would leap them over my Hand, as I held it on the Ground.

I had the good Fortune one Day to divert the Emperor in an extraordinary Manner. I desir'd several Sticks, Two Foot high, should be brought me; which was accordingly done next Morning. I took Nine of them, which I fix'd in the Ground in a Quadrangular Form, on the Tops of which I extended my Handkerchief, very tight, making a Ledge with Four other Sticks, rising about Five Inches above the Handkerchief: This done, I desir'd the Emperor to let a Troop of his best Horse exercise upon this Plain. He consented; and I lifted them up one after the other, ready mounted and arm'd, with proper Officers to exercise them; and I may say I never saw better military Discipline in any Part of the World. The Sticks above the Handkerchief secur'd them from falling; and but one Accident happen'd, which proceeded from an Officer's Horse pawing a Hole in my Handkerchief, which threw

threw him down; the Horse strain'd his Shoulder, but the Rider got no Hurt. The Emperor had this Diversion repeated, and was once pleas'd to give the Word of Command himself. As I was entertaining the Court with these Kind of Exploits, an Express was brought, that a great black Substance was found lying near the Place where I was first discover'd; its Edges extending very wide, and rising up in the Middle a Man's Heighth, or more; that having got to the Top, they found it even, but sound-ed hollow under Foot: This they imagin'd belong'd to the *Man Mountain*; and, if his Majesty pleas'd, would undertake to bring it. I knew what they meant, and rejoic'd heartily at the Intelligence; for I thought it had been lost at Sea, though I remember it was fastened with a String to my Head, as I was rowing; but by what Accident I lost it, when I came on Shore, I was in such Confusion, that I know not: I intreated his Majesty that it might be brought me, and describ'd to him the Use of it. The next Day it arriv'd, but in no good Condition; for they had bored Holes in the Brim, and fasten'd it to a Cord, by which it was dragg'd along the Ground above half a Mile. Two Days after this Adventure, the Emperor having order'd that Part of his Troops quarter'd
about

about his Metropolis, consisting of Three Thousand Foot, and One Thousand Horse, to be in Readiness, diverted himself by making them march between my Legs, whilst I stood like a Colossus. They were order'd to march with the strictest Decency, upon Pain of Death; which, however, did not prevent some young Officers from looking upwards as they passed under me; and, to tell you the Truth, my Breeches were in so ill a Condition at that Time, that they afforded some Opportunities of Laughter and Admiration. I had presented so many Memorials for my Liberty, that at length his Majesty open'd the Matter to his Council, where it was oppos'd only by *Skyresb Bolgolam*, who was Admiral of the Realm, and a Man well vers'd in Publick Affairs, but of a morose Temper: However, he was at length perswaded to comply, and drew up the Conditions upon which I was to have my Freedom. These Articles he brought to me himself, attended by Two Under-Secretaries, and several Persons of Distinction. After they were read, I swore to them, in the Manner of my own Country, and afterwards, according to their Laws, which was by holding my Right-foot in my Left-hand, to place the Middle-finger of my Right-hand on the Crown of my Head,

Head, and my Thumb on the Tip of my Right-ear. But, to give you an Idea of the Stile, and Manner of Expression peculiar to that People, and the Articles of my Liberty; I have translated the whole, which I here offer to the Publick.

*Golbasto Momaren Evlame Gurdillo She-
fin Mully Ully Gue*, Delight and Terror of the Universe, whose Dominions extend to the Extremities of the Globe, at whose Nod the Princes of the Earth tremble; his most sublime Majesty proposeth the following Articles to the *Man Mountain*, which by solemn Oath he shall be oblig'd to perform.

I. He shall not depart our Dominions without Leave, under our great Seal.

II. He shall not enter our Metropolis without Order.

III. He shall confine his Walks to the High Roads.

IV. As he walks, he shall take Care that he trample not on our loving Subjects, or whatsoever belongeth to them, or handle them, without their own Consent.

V. If

V. If an Express requires Dispatch, he shall be oblig'd to carry the Messenger and Horse Six Days Journey once a Month, and return him safe, if so requir'd.

VI. He shall be our Ally against the People of *Blesfescu*, and defend us to the Utmost of his Might.

VII. That he shall be assisting to our Workmen, in carrying Stones for our high Walls, and other Buildings.

VIII. That the said *Man Mountain* shall in Two Months Time deliver in an exact Survey of the Circumference of our Dominions, by a Computation of his own Paces round the Coast.

Lastly, That upon his solemn Oath to observe these Articles, he shall have daily Provision, sufficient for One Thousand, Seven Hundred, Twenty Four of our Subjects; and other Marks of Favour.

*Given at our Palace, at
Belsaborac, the 12th
Day of the 91st Moon
of our Reign.*

I swore

I swore, and subscrib'd to these Articles, whereupon I was immediately set at Liberty in the Presence of the Emperor, at whose Feet I prostrated myself; but he commanded me to rise, and added, after many kind Expressions, that he hoped I should continue to deserve his Favours.

The Reason why Food sufficient for One Thousand, Seven Hundred, Twenty Four of the Natives was allotted me, for my daily Subsistence, proceeded from an exact Survey the Mathematicians made of my Body, which they found to be in Proportion to one of theirs, as One Thousand, Seven Hundred, Twenty Four is to One: So great is the Ingenuity of this People, as well as the prudent and exact OEconomy of the Prince.





C H A P. IV.

MILDENDO, *the Metropolis of LILLIPUT, and the Emperor's Palace, described. The Author's Conversation with the Principal Secretary concerning EUROPE: And his Offers to serve the Emperor in his Wars.*



WHEN I first had my Liberty, I obtain'd Leave to see *Mildendo*, the Metropolis, with strict Charge not to hurt the Inhabitants or their Houses. The People had Notice of my coming, by Proclamation. The Walls of the City are Two Foot and Half high, and Eleven Inches broad, flank'd with strong Towers, at Ten Foot Distance. I stept over the Western Gate, and pass'd sideways along the Two principal Streets in my Waistcoat, lest I should damage the Houses with the Skirts of my Coat. Strict Orders had been given, that nobody should stir out of their Doors. It appear'd to be a populous Place, by the Number of Inhabitants

Inhabitants I saw at the Windows and Tops of the Houses. The City is Five Hundred Foot square, and is divided into Quarters by the Two great Streets; abundance of Alleys and Lanes go from them, too narrow for me to enter. The Houses are from Three to five Stories: The Shops and Markets well provided. At the Meeting of the great Streets is the Emperor's Palace, surrounded by a Wall, which I had the Liberty to step over, but could not see his Majesty's Apartment, the Gates being very low, without stepping over the Houses into another Court; but was prevented, by the Height of the Houses, which were Five Foot, till by means of Two Stools, which I made on purpose, I could step over from one Stool to the other. By this Contrivance I got into the inmost Court, and lying down on my Side, I discover'd the most magnificent Apartments imaginable: I saw the Royal Family, and had the Honour of kissing her Imperial Majesty's Hand out of the Window. I shall not trouble the Reader with farther Particulars, designing in a short Time to publish a general Description of this Empire. I come now to relate the Transactions which hap-

C 2

pened

pened during my Nine Months Residence in that Empire.

About a Fortnight after I had obtain'd my Liberty, I had a Visit from the principal Secretary *Reldresal*, who complimented me on my Liberty, and said he might pretend to some Merit in it; and added, that it was occasion'd by the present Situation of Affairs at Court: For, said he, tho' our Condition appears flourishing to Foreigners, we labour under Two Evils; Faction at Home, and Danger of Invasion from Abroad. As to the First, for Seventy Moons we have had contending Parties, under the Names of *Tramecksan* and *Slamecksan*, from the different Heighth of the Heels of their Shoes. It's said, that high Heels are the most agreeable to our ancient Constitution; but his Majesty admits only of low Heels in the Administration of Government, and the Offices of the Crown. You may particularly observe that his Majesty's Imperial Heels are lower than the rest of the Court. All Society between the Two Parties is lost by these Animosities; tho' we have the Power, the high Heels exceed us in Number. We imagine, his Imperial Highness, the Heir to the Crown, tends

towards the high Heels, for we can discover one of his Heels higher than the other, which makes him limp in his Gait. Now, in the midst of these Discontents, we are threaten'd with an Invasion from the Island of *Blefuscu*, the other large and powerful Empire; for our Philosophers give no Credit to what you tell us of other Parts of the World inhabited by People of your Size; neither do our oldest Histories mention any other great Empires than *Lilliput* and *Blefuscu*; which Two Powers have been engag'd in War for Six and Thirty Moons past, which happen'd on this Occasion.

The primitive Way of breaking Eggs before we eat them, was on the larger End; but his present Majesty's Grandfather, when he was a Boy, cutting one of his Fingers by breaking an Egg the old Way, the Emperor, his Father, publish'd an Edict, commanding all his Subjects, upon great Penalties, to break the smallest End of their Eggs. This Law was so resented by the People, that Six Rebellions have been rais'd on that Account, in which one Emperor has lost his Life, and another his Crown. These Commotions have always been fomented

by the Monarchs of *Blefuscu*, which Country is a Place of Refuge for the Exiles. Eleven Thousand have suffer'd Death rather than submit to the new Way of breaking their Eggs. Many Hundred Volumes have been publish'd in this Controversy; but those of the *Big-Endians* are prohibited, and themselves render'd incapable, by Law, of holding Employments. The Emperor of *Blefuscu* has accus'd us, by his Embassadors, of making a Schism in Religion, by offending, in a fundamental Point, against the Doctrine of *Lustrog*, in the 54th Chapter of the *Brundecral*, which is their *Alcoran*: But the Text is strain'd, for the Words are; All true Believers shall break their Eggs at the convenient End; and which that is, should be left to every Man's Conscience, or to the chief Magistrate, to determine. The *Big-Indian* Exiles have gain'd so much Credit at the Court of *Blefuscu*, as to have been able, by their Insinuations, to raise a War, which hath lasted Thirty Six Moons. Great Losses have been sustain'd on both Sides; but that of the Enemy is reckon'd greatest. However, as they threaten a Descent with a numerous

merous Fleet, his Majesty, from the Confidence he has in your Valour and Strength, order'd me to lay this Account before you.

I desir'd, that, with my humble Duty to his Majesty, he would assure him I was ready to hazard my Life against any Invaders of his Empire.





C H A P. V.

The Author, by an extraordinary Stratagem, prevents an Invasion: For which he is honour'd with an high Title. Embassadors are sent from Blefuscu to sue for Peace. The Empress's Apartment being on Fire, the Author saves the rest of the Palace.



THE Island of *Blefuscu* is situated to the North-East of *Liliput*; from whence it is separated only by a small Channel, whose greatest Depth, in the Middle, at High-Water, is about Six Foot, in other Places Five. As they had receiv'd no Account of me, all Intercourse between the Two Empires being forbidden, I communicated to his Majesty a Project of seizing the Enemy's whole Fleet. I went and took a View of it from behind a Hill, with my Perspective Glass; and when

when I came home, obtain'd a Warrant for a Quantity of Cables and Iron Bars. The Cables were like Packthread, and the Bars of Iron of the Size of Knitting Needles; but this I made fit for my Purpose, by twisting Three of them together, and bent the End of the Wire into a Hook. I provided Fifty Hooks, fasten'd to as many Cables, which answer'd the Number of the Enemy's Fleet; then pulling off my Coat, Shoes, and Stockings, I waded till I came near the Middle, and with little swimming I soon came to the Fleet. At my Approach, the Enemy soon left their Ships: I then took my Tackling, and fasten'd a Hook to the Prow of each Ship, and tied the Ends of all the Cords together. But, during the Time of this Employment, the Enemy so pester'd my Hands and Face with their Arrows, that my Eyes were in Danger, till I bethought myself of a Pair of Spectacles I had in my Pocket, which prov'd an excellent Shield for my Eyes, against those small Arrows. I had now fasten'd all my Hooks, and taking the Knot in my Hand, began to pull, but could not stir a Ship; because of the Anchors. I resolutely cut all the Cables with my Knife, that fasten'd the Anchors,

and then, with the greatest Ease, drew Fifty of their largest Men of War after me. The *Blefusudians*, astonish'd at what I was doing, only imagin'd my Design was to let the Ships run a-drift; but when they perceiv'd the whole Fleet moving after me, 'tis impossible to conceive their Marks of Grief and Despair. When I was out of the Reach of their Arrows, I stopp'd, and pick'd out those which stuck in my Hands and Face, and anointed them with some Ointment that was given me at my first Arrival; and waiting till it was Low-Water, I waded over with my Cargo, and arriv'd safe at the Royal Port of *Lilliput*. The Emperor and the whole Court, who stood on the Shore, expecting the Event of this Adventure, were much much in Pain whilst I was up to the Chin in Water. They saw the Ships move forward, without discerning me, and concluded the Fleet was sailing in an hostile Manner, and that I was drowned. But their Fears soon dissipated as I drew nigh, and when I came within Hearing, I cry'd in a loud Voice, Long live the most Puissant Emperor of *Lilliput*. The Prince receiv'd me on Shore with the greatest Encomiums, and gave me the highest
Title

Title of Honour among them. So vast is the Ambition of Princes, that his Majesty desir'd I would take an Opportunity of bringing the rest of the Enemy's Ships; and then propos'd to reduce that Kingdom into a Province, and destroy the *Big-Indian* Exiles. By many Arguments, drawn from the Topicks of Policy and Justice, I endeavour'd to divert his Design; and told him I would not be an Instrument of bringing a free and brave People to Slavery.

After serious Debates in Council, my Opinion was agreed to by the wisest Part of the Ministry. This Declaration of mine agreed so ill with his Majesty's Politicks, that he frequently mention'd it, by Way of Reflection, which was farther strengthened by some Insinuations of my private Enemies: And from this Time, his Majesty and a Junto of Ministers form'd an Intrigue, which in Two Months had like to have ended in my Destruction. Of so little Weight are the greatest Services done to Princes, when balanc'd against a Refusal to gratify their Passions. About Three Weeks after, Six Embassadors were sent from *Blefuscu*, with humble Offers of Peace, which was soon concluded, to the Advantage of our Emperor

peror. When the Treaty was ended, wherein I used what Interest I had at Court in their Favour, I receiv'd a formal Visit from their Excellencies, who made me many Compliments on my Valour and Generosity, and desir'd me to give them some Proof of my Strength, in which I readily oblig'd them.

After I had given Proof of my Strength to their Satisfaction and Surprize, I desired they would do me the Honour to present my most humble Respects to the Emperor, their Master, whose Virtues had so justly shone, to the Admiration of Mankind, and whose Royal Person I resolv'd to attend, before I return'd to my own Country. Accordingly, the first Time I had the Honour to see our Emperor, he granted me Leave, at my Request, to wait on the *Blesuscudian* Monarch; but with that Indifference, that I could not guess the Reason, till it was whisper'd to me by a certain Person, that *Flimnap* and *Bolgolam* had represented my Intercourse with the Ambassadors as a Mark of Disaffection: Hence I began to have an imperfect Idea of Courts and Ministers. It is to be remark'd, that these Ambassadors spoke to me by an Interpreter; the Languages
of

of both Empires differing as much from each other, as any two in *Europe*, and each Nation valuing itself on the Beauties and Antiquity of its own. However, thro' the Trade and Commerce between them, together with the Custom of each Empire's sending their young Nobility to polish themselves in the Understanding of Men and Manners, there are Persons of Distinction that can hold Conversation in both Tongues, as I found after; which, in the midst of my Misfortunes, through the Malice of my Enemies, prov'd of singular Service.

It was not long before I had an Opportunity of being useful to his Majesty, occasion'd by a Fire which broke out in her Imperial Majesty's Apartment, which was occasion'd thro' the Neglect of a Chambermaid. I was alarm'd at Midnight by the People, to come to their Assistance, who had already apply'd Ladders to the Walls of the Apartment, and were well provided with Buckets, but the Water was at some Distance. I was supply'd with what Water they had; but, thro' the Smallness of the Buckets, it did little good. In this Exigency, if I had not thought of an Expedient, the whole Palace had been burnt to the Ground. I had, the Night before,

before, drank plentifully of a Sort of Wine which prov'd very diuretick, and luckily happening to operate at this Time, I voided it in such Quantity, that in Three Minutes the Fire was extinguish'd. I went home, without waiting to congratulate with his Majesty, lest he should resent the Manner by which I perform'd it; for no body is permitted to make Water within the Precincts of the Palace, on Pain of Capital Punishment. The Emperor would freely have pardon'd me, had not the Empress conceiv'd such an Abhorrence at the Action, that she remov'd to the most distant Part of the Court, and resolv'd those Buildings should never be repair'd for her Use.





C H A P. VI.

Of the Inhabitants of Lilliput. Their Learning, Laws, and Customs. The Manner of Educating their Children. The Author's Way of Living in the Country. His Vindication of a great Lady.



Ltho' I intend to defer giving a particular History of this Empire, I shall however make some general Observations upon it.

As the common Size of the Natives is under Six Inches high, the same Proportion extends throughout all other Animals and Vegetables of the Empire, and Nature has adapted the Eyes of the *Lilliputians* proportionate to the Objects before them. As an Instance of this Symmetry, I cant help observing, that I saw a Cook pulling a Lark not so large as a common Fly, and a young Girl threading a Needle, invisible to me, with invisible Silk. I could just reach to the Tops of their highest Trees. Learning has flourish'd for many Ages among them, in all its Branches; but their Manner of Writing is very peculiar,

peculiar, being neither from left to right, or right to left, or from upwards down, or from downward up; but from one Corner of the Paper to the other, like Ladies in *England*. They bury their Dead with their Heads downwards, from an Opinion that the Earth in Eleven Thousand Moons will turn upside down, by which means they will be found standing on their Feet at the Resurrection. Which Doctrine is rejected by the Learned, though the Practice continues in Compliance to the Vulgar. There are several Laws, though contrary to those of my own Country, I wish were as well executed. The first relates to Informers. All Enemies against the State are punish'd here with the utmost Severity: But if the Person accused appears innocent upon his Trial, the Accuser is put to Death, and full Compensation made to the innocent Person for his Hardship and Charges, and his Innocence proclaimed throughout the City. Fraud is punish'd with Death here, as being a Crime against which Honesty has no Fence, whilst Care and Vigilancy is Security against common Theft: For since Credit is necessary in Trade, where Fraud is permitted and connived at, or hath no Law to punish it, the honest Dealer is kept under,

under, and the Knave gets the Advantage. I once interceded with the King for a Criminal who had run away with his Master's Money, which he had received upon Order, and, to extenuate his Crime, said it was a Breach of Trust only; he was surprized that I should offer that in Defence which was the greatest Aggravation of that Crime; which made me heartily asham'd. Although Rewards and Punishments are the Hinges of Government, no Nation puts this Maxim in Practice but that of *Lilliput*: Where, if a Man can bring sufficient Proof that he has strictly observed the Laws of his Country Seventy-three Moons, he has several Privileges granted him, with a Sum of Money. When I told them our Laws were inforc'd by Penalties only, they thought it a great Defect. It is on this Account that the Image of Justice, in their Courts of Judicature, is formed with six Eyes, two before, as many behind, and one of each Side, to signify Circumspection; with a Bag of Gold in the right Hand; in the Left, a Sword undrawn, to shew she is more disposed to reward than punish. In chusing Persons for Employments, more Regard is had to their Morals than Abilities, and believing that Providence never intended the

the Management of publick Affairs a Mystery, imagine they are adapted to the Capacity of common Understandings ; and as Truth, Justice, and Temperance, are in every Man's Power, the Practice of those Virtues, assisted by Experience, may qualify a Man to serve his Country except where a Course of Study is requir'd. But they think the want of Moral Virtues, so far from being supply'd by superior Endowments of the Mind, that Employments cannot be put into more dangerous Hands; and, at least, that an ignorant Mistake, in a virtuous Mind, can never be of such fatal Consequences as the corrupt Practices of a Man able to multiply and defend his Corruptions. In like manner the disbelieving a Divine Providence incapacitates a Man of holding any publick Station: For since Kings are the Deputies of Providence, they think it very absurd in a Prince to employ a Man who disowns the Authority under which he acts: I mean here only the Laws originally instituted, and free from the Corruptions that have since crept in amongst them. As to the acquiring great Offices, by the infamous Practice of Rope-dancing, it was introduc'd by his present Majesty's Grandfather, and heightened by the Increase of Party and Faction.

Ingratitude,

Ingratitude is punish'd with Death, for, they say, whoever makes ill Returns to his Benefactor, must be an Enemy to the rest of Mankind to whom he is not oblig'd, and therefore not fit to live. The *Lilliputians* differ from us in their Notions of the Duty of Parents and Children; and hold, that the great Law of Nature acts in us, as in other Animals, by the Motives of Concupiscence, to propagate our own Species, and that the Tenderness towards the Young proceeds from the same Principle. They, therefore, think the Child is under no Obligation to its Parents for bringing it into the World. For these Reasons the Parents ought least to be trusted in the Education of their Children, and therefore they have publick Nurseries for their Education from Twenty Moons old, to the Age of Fifteen Years. These Schools are suited to the different Qualities and Conditions of the Parents, for both Sexes. The Nurseries, for Males of noble Birth, are provided with learned Professors, under whom they are bred in the Principles of Honour, Justice, Religion, and Love of their Country. All their Time is employ'd in Study, except that of eating, and two Hours Diversion, which is daily allow'd them

them in Bodily Exercise. At four Years of Age they dress themselves, and have aged Women to perform their menial Offices. To avoid the early bad Impressions of Folly and Vice, they are not suffer'd to converse with Servants, and take their Diversions in the Presence of the Professor, or one of his Deputies. Their Parents are allow'd to see them twice a Year, and then but an Hour: They may kiss them at meeting and parting, but are not suffer'd to whisper, or use any fondling Expressions. The Pension, for the Education of a Child, upon failure of Payment, is levy'd by the Emperor's Officers. The Nurseries for Children, of an inferior Rank, are manag'd after the same Manner, only those design'd for Trades are put out Apprentices at Eleven Years Old, which answers to One and Twenty with us. In the Female Nurseries, the Manner of Education is almost the same, only they are attended by Servants of their own Sex, and have a smaller Compass of Learning enjoyn'd them. And if it be found that these Nurses entertain the Girls with frightful Stories, too common among us, they are publickly whipt through the City, imprison'd for a Year, and banish'd to the most remote Part of the Country. Thus the young

young Ladies there are as much ashamed of appearing Cowards and Fools, as the Men, and despise all personal Ornaments beyond Cleanliness and Decency. When they are Twelve Years of Age, or marriageable, they are taken Home by their Parents with Expressions of Gratitude to the Professors for their Care. In the Nurseries of Females, of the meaner Sort, they are instructed in Works proper for their Sex. The most mean, who have Children at these Nurseries, pay a Share of what they get monthly, besides the annual Pension, which serves afterward to be a Portion for the Child: For they think it most unjust, that People should have Children to be a Burthen to the Publick. Labourers and Cottagers Children are kept at Home to cultivate the Earth. The infirm are supported in Hospitals: For no Beggars are allow'd in the Kingdom. It may divert the Reader to give some Account of my Manner of Living in this Country. I made my self a Table and Chair, out of the largest Trees I could get. Two Hundred Sempstresses were employ'd in making me a Shirt, Sheets, and Table Linnen. They took Measure of the Length of my Body with a Cord, and then of the Thickness of my right Thumb,

by

by which Means they computed the Bigness of the rest of my Body. The Three Hundred Taylors, who were employ'd to make me Cloaths, contrived otherwise; they rais'd a Ladder against me as I was kneeling, upon which one of them mounted, and let fall a Plumb-Line from my Collar to the Floor, which answer'd the Length of my Coat; but my Waist and Arms I measured my self. When they were finish'd, which was done at my House; they look'd like Patch-work, only they were all of a Colour. Three Hundred Cooks, who had convenient Huts about my House, dress'd my Victuals, and prepared two Dishes a piece. I took up Twenty Waiters on the Table; the rest attended below, to sling the Dishes of Meat and Liquors I wanted, which the others drew up by Cords. The Meat was so small, that a Surloin of Beef served only for three Bits, the rest in Proportion. His Imperial Majesty had the Curiosity of seeing me dine, attended by his Treasurer *Flinnap*, who look'd at me with a four Countenance, which I seem'd not to regard, but eat more than usual, to fill his Majesty with Admiration. I have Reason to believe this Visit from his Majesty gave *Flinnap* an Opportunity of doing me ill Offices.

Offices. He had always been my secret
 Enemy, though he outwardly caress'd me,
 and represented to the Emperor, the low
 Condition of the Treasury; the Discount
 in circulating Exchequer Bills; the vast
 Sums I had cost him, for which Reasons
 he advis'd him to dismiss me. I am here
 obliged to vindicate the Reputation of an
 excellent Lady, who was an innocent Suf-
 ferer upon my Account. The Treasurer
 took it in his Head to be jealous of his
 Wife: Some malicious Tongues having
 inform'd him, that she had an Affecti-
 on to my Person, and that she once paid me
 a private Visit. This I solemnly declare to
 be a most infamous Falshood, but must say
 she was pleas'd to treat me with all inno-
 cent Marks of Freedom and Friendship.
 I own she often came publicly, but not
 without her Sister and young Daughter,
 and some other Acquaintance, as other
 Ladies did. I appeal to my Servants,
 whether, when a Coach stopt at my Door,
 they were ignorant who were in it. On
 these Occasions, upon my Servants No-
 tice, I went and paid my Respects, and
 then took up the Coach and Horses, and
 set them upon my Table. I have had
 four Coaches at once upon it, full of Com-
 pany, and have pass'd the Afternoon very
 agreeably

agreeably in their Conversations. But I defy the Treasurer, and his Informers, *Clustil* and *Drunlo*, to prove I have receiv'd any Person *Incognito*, except *Reldresal*, who was sent by his Majesty's Command. I had not dwelt so long upon this, if the Lady's Reputation was not nearly concern'd, to say nothing of my own, though I had the Honour to be a *Nardac*, and the Treasurer only a *Clumglum*, a Title a Degree inferior, but has the Precedence in the Right of his Post. These Informations occasion'd *Flimnap* to shew his Lady an ill Face, and me a worse; he was at last reconcil'd to her, but from that Time my Interest declin'd, the Emperor being over-rul'd by his Favourite.





C H A P. VII.

The Author being inform'd of a Design to accuse him of High Treason escapes to Blefuscu. His Reception there.



Efore I give an Account of my leaving this Kingdom, I must inform you of a private Intrigue which had been carried on against me for two Months. I had indeed heard of the Disposition of Princes, and Courts, but from the Meanness of my Condition was unqualified for them: Neither could I have thought to find such terrible Effects of them in a foreign Country. As I was preparing to wait on the Emperor of *Blefuscu*, a considerable Person, whom I had serv'd when under Disgrace, came privately to my House in a Chair, and desired Admittance, without sending his Name. The Chairmen were dismissed: I put the Chair, with his Lordship, into my Pocket, and gave Orders to say I was indispos'd, and gone to Bed. I set

D

the

the Chair upon the Table, and observing his Lordship full of Concern, I inquired into the Reason, and he desired me to hear him in a Matter that concern'd my Honour and Life. Several Committees of Council have been held on your Account, and two Days since his Majesty came to a Resolution. You are sensible that *Skeyris Belgolam*, the High Admiral, is your Enemy, whose Glory you have obscur'd as Admiral, by your Success against *Blesufcu*. This Lord, in Conjunction with *Flimnap*, *Limloc* the General, *Lalcon* the Chamberlain, and *Balmust* the Grand Justiciary, have prepared Articles of Impeachment against you for Treason, and other Crimes. Conscious of my Innocence, I was going to interrupt him, but he desir'd my Silence, and said, that, in Gratitude for past Favours, he had got a Copy of the whole Proceedings, at the Hazard of his Head. The Four principal Articles in Substance are these,

First, That according to a Statute, made in the Reign of *Calin Deffar Plume*, you are liable to the Penalties of High Treason, for making Water within the Precincts of the Royal Palace; most maliciously, traiterously, and

and devilishly, under Colour of extinguishing the Fire in her Imperial Majesty's Apartment.

Secondly, That like a false Traitor to his Serene Imperial Majesty, you refused to seize the other Ships of the Empire of *Blefuscu*, and reduce it to a Province, by which Means an End might have been put to the *Big Endian* Heresy in that Island; upon Pretence of being unwilling to Force the Consciences, or destroy the Lives and Liberties of an innocent People.

Thirdly, That you did aid, abet, comfort, and divert, the Embassadors of *Blefuscu*, who came to sue for Peace, although you knew them to be Servants to a Prince who had lately been in open War against his Imperial Majesty.

Fourthly, That contrary to the Duty of a faithful Subject, you are now preparing to make a Voyage to the Court of *Blefuscu*, only upon verbal Licence from his Majesty; and, under Colour of the said Licence, do falsely and traiterously intend to take

the said Voyage, with a Design to aid, comfort, and abet, the Emperor of *Blefuscu*, so lately in open War with his Imperial Majesty.

There are some other Articles, but these are the most important. I assure you his Majesty gave several Marks of his Lenity in the Debates upon this Impeachment, often urging the Services you had done him, and endeavouring to extenuate your Crimes: But the Treasurer and Admiral insisted that you should be put to the most painful and ignominious Death, by setting your House on Fire by Night, and the General to attend with Twenty Thousand Men, armed with poisoned Arrows, to shoot you on the Face and Hands. Some of your Servants were to have private Orders to strew a poisonous Juice on your Shirts, which would make you tear your own Flesh, and die in the greatest Agonies. The General came into this Opinion: But his Majesty brought off the Chamberlain, resolving to save your Life, if possible. *Reldresal*, the principal Secretary for private Affairs, was commanded to give his Opinion, which he did, and therein justified the good Thoughts you entertain'd of him. He allowed your Crimes

Crimes were great, but that there was still Room for Mercy, the most commendable Virtue in Princes, and for which his Majesty was so justly renown'd. He said, the Friendship between you was so well known, that he might be thought partial; however, in Obedience to his Majesty's Command, he would offer his Sentiments: That if his Majesty, from his Merciful Disposition, would spare your Life, in Consideration of past Services, and only order your Eyes to be put out, that, in his humble Opinion, Justice would be satisfy'd in some measure, and Mankind would extol the Lenity of his Majesty, and the generous Proceedings of his Counsellors. That you might be useful to his Majesty by your Strength, after the Loss of your Eyes. That Blindness is an Addition to Courage, by concealing Danger from us. That in the Enterprize against the Enemy's Fleet, the Fear of your Eyes was the greatest Difficulty, and that if you saw by the Eyes of the Ministers it was sufficient, since the greatest Princes do no more. This Proposal was rejected by the whole Board. The Admiral rose in a Passion, and said, He wondered how the Secretary durst give his Opinion for saving the Life of a Traytor, whose very Ser-

D 3

vices

vices were Aggravations of his Crimes; urging, that you who are able to extinguish such Fires by Discharge of Urine, might raise an Inundation, and drown the whole Palace; and that the same Strength, which enabled you to bring the Enemy's Fleet, might serve, upon the least Discontent, to carry it back. That he had Reasons to think you was a *Big-Indian* in your Heart; and, as Treason begins in the Heart, before it appears in Overt Acts; so he accused you as a Traytor, and therefore insisted you should be put to Death. The Treasurer, who was of the same Opinion, set forth the Streights his Majesty's Revenue was reduced to by the Charge of maintaining you: That the Secretary's Expedient of putting out your Eyes, so far from being a Remedy, would increase that Evil; as is manifest from that Practice of blinding Fowl that they may feed faster, and be the sooner fat: That his Majesty and Council, who are your Judges, being fully convinc'd of your Guilt, was sufficient to condemn you without formal Proofs. But his Majesty, determin'd against Capital Punishment, was pleas'd to say, that since the Loss of your Eyes was thought too easy, some other might be inflicted hereafter. Your Friend the
Secre-

Secretary humbly desiring to be heard again, answer'd to what the Treasurer had said concerning the great Charge his Majesty was at in maintaining you, by telling him, as he had the sole Disposal of the Emperor's Revenue, he might gradually lessen your Establishment; by which means, for want of Food, you would decay in few Months, and that the Stench of your Carcass then would not be so dangerous: That your Flesh might be cut from the Bones, and Five or Six Thousand Men take it away in two or three Days, leaving the Skeleton as a Monument of Admiration to Posterity. Thus the Affair was com-promised, by your Friend the Secretary. The Project of starving you was strictly enjoin'd to be kept secret: But the other Sentence was entered on the Books, none dissenting but *Bolgolam*, who, being a Creature of the Empress's, was continually instigated by her to insist on your Death, her Malice having begun from the Time you took that infamous Method of extinguishing the Fire in her Apartment. In three Days the Secretary will be order'd to come and read the Articles to you, and then signify the Lenity of his Majesty, and the Punishment to be inflicted, which his Majesty

doth not question you will humbly submit to. Twenty of his Majesty's Surgeons will attend to see the Operation well perform'd, which will be by sharp Arrows discharg'd into the Balls of your Eyes as you lie down. Take what Measures your Prudence directs; and, to avoid Suspicion, I must return immediately as privately as I came. He did so, and left me alone under many Doubts and Perplexities of Mind. It was a Custom introduc'd by this Prince and Ministry (different from the Practices of former Times) that after the Decree of any cruel Execution, to gratify the Monarch's Repentment, or the Malice of a Favourite, the Emperor made a Speech to his Court, expressing his Lenity and Tenderneſs confess'd by all the World. This Speech was immediately publish'd through the Kingdom. The more these Encomiums were enlarged, or insisted on, the People observ'd, the more inhuman was the Punishment, and the Person more innocent. As to my self, I was so little a Courtier that I could not discover the Lenity of the Sentence, but thought it rather rigorous than gentle: I sometimes thought of standing my Trial; for, though I could not deny the Facts, I hoped they would admit

admit of some Extenuation. But having observ'd, in many State Trials, that they always terminated as the Judge directed, I would not rely on so dangerous a Decision against such powerful Enemies. Once I was bent upon Resistance, knowing I could easily subdue the whole Empire, and destroy the Metropolis with Stones; but remembering the Oath I had made to the Emperor, and the Title of *Nardac*, which he had honour'd me with, I rejected that Project with Horror. At last, I fixed upon a Resolution, for which I may probably incur some Censure, and not unjustly; for, I confess, I owe the preserving my Eyes and Liberty to my own Rashness, because had I known then the Nature of Princes and Ministers, I have since observ'd at other Courts, and their Methods of treating Criminals, less obnoxious than my self, I should here fully have submitted to the Punishment. But, hurry'd on by my Youth, and having his Majesty's Licence to go to *Blefuscu*, I took this Opportunity, before the three Days elapsed, to acquaint my Friend the Secretary with my Resolution of setting out to *Blefuscu* that Morning; and without waiting an Answer, went to the

Side of the Island where the Fleet lay. I seized a large Man of War, and fastning a Cable to the Prow, I stripp'd, and put my Cloaths and Coverlet (which I brought under my Arm) into the Vessel, and drawing it after me, got safe to the Royal Port of *Blesustu*, where they expected me. I had two Guides to the Capital City, which is of the same Name. I held them in my Hands, till I came near the Gates of the City, and desired they would signify my Arrival to the Secretary, and let him know I waited his Majesty's Commands. I had Answer, That in an Hour, his Majesty, attended by the Royal Family, was coming to receive me. I advanced to meet the Emperor, and his Train, who alighted from their Coaches, without any Concern. I kissed his Majesty's and the Empress's Hand as I lay on the Ground; and, told him, I came according to my Promise, and with the Licence of the Emperor my Master, to have the Honour of seeing so great a Monarch, to offer what Service was consistent with the Duty to my Prince. I mention'd nothing of my Disgrace, neither could I reasonably conceive the Emperor would discover the Secret when I was not in his Power; but herein I
soon

soon found my self deceived. I shall not trouble my Reader with a particular Account of my Reception, which was suitable to the Generosity of the Prince, nor of the Difficulties I underwent for want of House and Bed; being forced to lie on the Ground, wrapt up in my Coverlet.





CHAP. VIII.

The Author luckily finds Means to leave BLEFUSCU: And, after some Difficulties, returns to his native Country.



THREE Days after my Arrival, my Curiosity leading me to view the Coast, I observed, about a League off at Sea, somewhat like a Boat overfet. I pulled off my Shoes and Stockings, and wading Two or Three Hundred Yards, I found the Tide drove the Object nigher, and then found it was a real Boat; which, I suppos'd, might have been driven from a Ship by a Storm. Whereupon I return'd, to the City and obtain'd Leave to have Twenty of the largest Vessels of the Fleet left, and Three Thousand Seamen, under the Command of a Vice-Admiral. The Fleet sail'd round, while I went the nearest Way to the Coast: I found it was driven nearer; and when the Ships came up, I stripp'd and swam up

up to it. The Seamen threw me Cordage, which I had provided before: This I fasten'd to the Head of the Boat, and the other End to a Man of War, but was still forc'd to swim behind, and push it forward as often as I could. The Tide favouring me, I advanc'd till I could feel Ground. I waited to rest a little, and fastening the Boat to Nine of the Ships, the Wind being fair, we brought her near the Shore; where, when the Tide was out, by the Assistance of Two Thousand Men, we turn'd her, and found her but little damag'd. I shall not trouble the Reader with the Difficulties I had of getting the Boat to the Royal Port of *Blesfescu*, where a vast Concourse of People appear'd, full of Wonder, to see a Vessel so large. I told the Emperor, good Fortune had thrown this in my Way, that I might return Home; and begg'd proper Materials to fit it up, and his Leave to depart; which, after some kind Expostulations, he granted. I wonder'd no Express had been sent, relating to me, from our Emperor to the Court of *Blesfescu*; but afterwards understood his Imperial Majesty only thought I was gone to *Blesfescu* in Performance of my Promise; but finding I did not return, he
at

at length consulted the Treasurer, and the rest of the Cabal, who advis'd him to send a Person of Distinction, with a Copy of the Articles, against me. The Envoy had Instructions to represent the Lenity of his Master in the Punishment assign'd; that I had fled from Justice; and if I did not return in Two Hours, should be depriv'd of my Title, and declar'd a Traitor. And farther added, that in order to maintain the Peace and Amity between the Two Nations, he expected I should be sent back to *Lilliput*, bound Hand and Foot, to be punish'd as a Traitor.

The Emperor of *Blefuscu*, after Three Days Consideration, return'd this Answer: That as for sending me bound, his Brother knew it was impossible; that altho' I had depriv'd him of his Fleet, he was still oblig'd to me for my good Offices in making the Peace; that both their Majesties would soon be made easy, for I had found a prodigious Vessel on Shore, able to carry me to Sea, which was fitting up, by his own Direction; and that both Empires would soon be freed from so insupportable an Incumbrance.

The Envoy return'd to *Lilliput* with this Answer, and the Monarch of *Blefuscu*

fuscu told me all that had pass'd, offering his gracious Protection (but with the strictest Confidence) if I would stay in his Service. I thank'd him, and begg'd to be excus'd; resolving never more to place any Confidence in Princes and Ministers, when I could avoid it. I told him, that since Fortune, whether good or bad, had thrown this Vessel in my Way, I resolv'd to venture on the Ocean, rather than be the Occasion of Difference between Two such mighty Monarchs. I discover'd afterwards that he was very glad of my Resolution, and so were most of his Ministers. Upon these Considerations, I hasten'd my Departure, to which the Court, impatient to have me gone, readily contributed. Five Hundred Workmen were employ'd to make me Sails; Cables and Ropes I made myself, by twisting Twenty or Thirty of the strongest of theirs together; a large Stone I found on the Sea Shore, serv'd me for an Anchor; I had the Tallow of Three Hundred Cows to grease my Boat; and was at incredible Pains in cutting down the largest Trees for Oars and Masts, wherein I was assisted by his Majesty's Ship-Carpenter in smoothing the Work. All being ready in about a Month,

Month, I sent to receive his Majesty's Commands, and take Leave. The Emperor, with his Family, came out of the Palace, and graciously gave me his Hand to kiss, as I lay down; so did the Empress, and the Princes of the Blood. His Majesty made me a Present of Fifty Purfes, of Two Hundred *Sprugs* each, with his Picture at Length, which I put into my Glove to preserve it. The Ceremonies at parting are too many to trouble the Reader with. I took Provision, consisting of an Hundred Oxen, and Three Hundred Sheep, with Bread and Drink proportionable, and as much Meat as Four Hundred Cooks could provide. I took Six Cows and Two Bulls alive, intending to propagate the Breed, and had Hay and Corn to feed them. I would have taken some of the Natives, but his Majesty had engag'd my Honour not to carry away any of his Subjects, altho' with their own Consent. All Things being prepar'd, I set sail on the 24th of *September*, 1701; and being about Four Leagues to the Northward, the Wind at South-East, I descry'd a small Island, about Half a League to the North-West. I cast Anchor on the left Side of the Island, which seem'd uninhabited; took
some

some Refreshment, and went to rest. I slept well, till within Two Hours of Day-break; I eat my Breakfast before Sunrise; and the Wind being fair, I heaved Anchor, and steer'd my Course the same as the Day before, wherein I was directed by a Pocket Compass. My Intention was to reach one of those Islands, which I had Reason to believe lay North-East of *Van Diemen's Land*. I discover'd nothing that Day, but the next in the Afternoon, being about Twenty Four Leagues from *Blesuscu*, by Computation, I descry'd a Sail, steering to the South-East: My Course was due East; I hail'd her, but had no Answer; the Wind slackning, I gain'd upon her, and in Half an Hour she espy'd me, and hung out her Ancient, and discharg'd a Gun. My Joy was inexpressible, at the Hopes I had of seeing my native Country, but more when I perceiv'd she had *English* Colours. I put my Cows and Sheep into my Pockets, and got on Board with my small Cargo of Provisions. It was an *English* Vessel returning from *Japan* by the North and South Seas, the Captain Mr. *John Biddel*, of *Deptford*, a civil Man, and a good Sailor. We were in 32° South Latitude, and here I met with
an

an old Comrade, *Peter Williams*, who gave me a good Character to the Captain. He us'd me kindly, and desired to know whence I came, and whither I was bound. I told him in few Words, but he thought me distracted, till I produc'd the small Cattle, which convinc'd him of my Veracity: I shew'd him the Money given me by the Emperor of *Blesfusen*, with his Majesty's Picture: I gave Two Purfes, of Two Hundred *Sprugs* each, and promis'd him a Cow, and Sheep, big with Young, when we came to *England*. I shall not trouble the Reader with the Particulars of this Voyage, which was prosperous for the most Part. We arriv'd in the *Downs* the 13th of *April*, 1702. I had only one Misfortune, that the Rats run away with one of my Sheep, which I found in a Hole, the Flesh pick'd from the Bones. The rest of my Cattle I got safe on Shore, which fed heartily upon the Grass in *Greenwich* Bowling-Green. I could not have preserv'd them so long a Voyage, had not the Captain allow'd me some fine Bisket, which I mix'd with Water for their constant Food. I made a considerable Profit of them, the short Time I stay'd in *England*, by shewing them

to

to Persons of Quality, and sold them at last for Six Hundred Pounds. The Breed is much encreas'd, especially the Sheep, which, I hope, will prove advantageous to the Woollen Manufactory, from the Fineness of the Fleece. I stay'd but Two Months with my Wife and Family; my insatiable Desire of seeing foreign Countries would not suffer me to continue longer. I left Fifteen Hundred Pounds with my Wife, and fix'd her in a House at *Redriff*; the Remainder I carry'd with me, to improve it. I had, besides this, an Estate of Thirty Pounds a Year left me by my Uncle, and a Lease of the *Black-Bull* in *Fetter-Lane*; so that my Family was provided for. My Boy and Girl were both at School, but I took my Leave of them and my Wife, and went on Board the *Adventure*, a Merchant Man, bound to *Surat*, Captain *John Nicholas*, of *Liverpool*, Commander. But shall refer my Account of this Voyage to the Second Part of my Travels.

The End of the First Part.

T R A V E L S

TRAVELS

INTO SEVERAL

Remote NATIONS

OF THE

WORLD.

By Capt. LEMUEL GULLIVER.

PART II

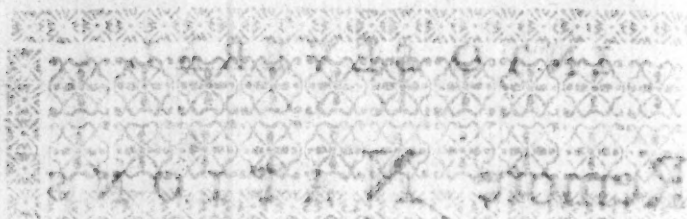
A Voyage to BROBDINGNAG.



L O N D O N:

Printed in the Year MDCCXXVII.

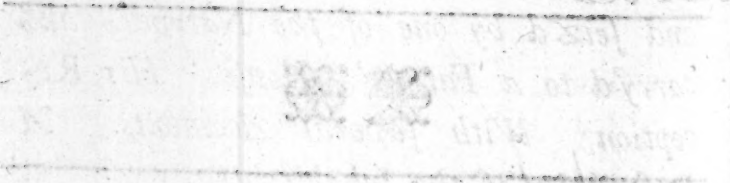
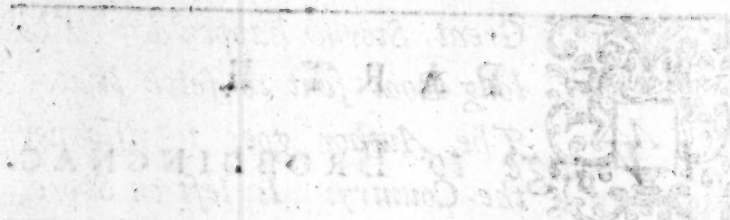
TRAVELS



OF THE

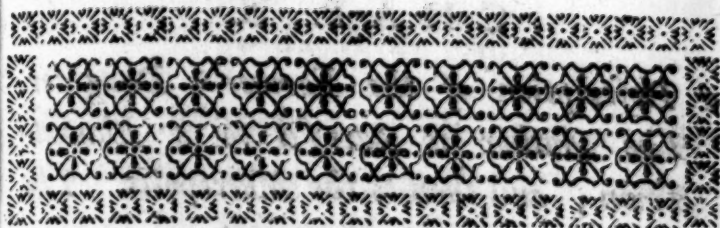
WORLD

By Capt. James GUTHRIE.



L O N D O N :

Printed in the Year MDCCLXXVII



THE CONTENTS.

CHAP. I.



Great Storm happen'd. The long Boat sent to fetch Water. The Author goes to discover the Country. Is left on Shore, and seiz'd by one of the Natives, and carry'd to a Farmer's House. His Reception: With several Accidents. A Description of the Inhabitants.

CHAP.

C H A P. II.

A Description of the Farmer's Daughter. The Author is carry'd to a Market-Town; and then to the Metropolis. The Particulars of his Journey.

C H A P. III.

The Author is sent for to Court. The Queen buys him, and presents him to the King. He disputes with his Majesty's great Scholars. An Apartment at Court provided for him. He is in Favour with the Queen. He maintains the Honour of his own Country, and quarrels with the Queen's Dwarf.

C H A P. IV.

The Country describ'd. A Proposal for correcting modern Maps. The King's Palace, and some Account of the Metropolis. The Author's Way of travelling. The chief Temple describ'd.

C H A P.

CHAP. V.

Several Adventures of the Author. The Execution of a Criminal. The Author shews his Skill in Navigation.

CHAP. VI.

The Author's Contrivances to please the King and Queen. He shews his Skill in Musick. The King enquires into the State of Europe; which the Author relates. The King's Observations.

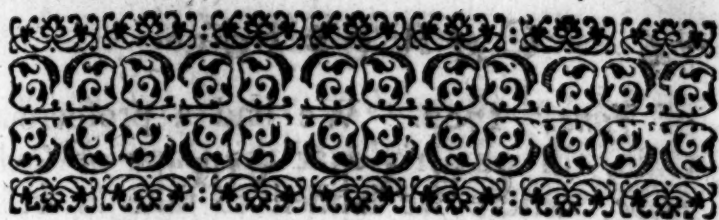
CHAP. VII.

The Author's Love of his Country. He makes a Proposal of much Advantage to the King, which is rejected. The King's Ignorance in Politicks. The Learning of the Country. Their Laws. Military Affairs. And Parties.

CHAP. VIII.

The King and Queen make a Progress to the Frontiers. The Author attends them. The Manner in which he leaves the Country. He returns to England.





TRAVELS.

PART II.

A Voyage to Brobdingnag.

CHAP. I.

A Great Storm happen'd. The long Boat sent to fetch Water. The Author goes to discover the Country. Is left on Shore, and seiz'd by one of the Natives, and carry'd to a Farmer's House. His Reception: With several Accidents. A Description of the Inhabitants.



BEING condemn'd by Nature and Fortune to an active and restless Life, I left my native Country, and went on Board the Ship formerly mention'd, on the 20th
E 2 of

of June, 1702. We had a prosperous Gale, till we arriv'd at the Cape of Good Hope, where we landed to take in fresh Water, but discovering a Lake, and the Captain falling sick, we stay'd till the End of March. We set Sail, and had fair Weather till we past the *Streights of Madagascar*. But having got Northward of that Island, and to about Five Degrees South Latitude, the Wind began to Blow with greater Violence, and more Westerly than usual, and continued so for Twenty Days, till we were driven to the East of the *Molucca Islands*, and about Three Degrees Northward of the Line, as we found by Observation; at which Time it was a perfect Calm. I was rejoiced till the Captain, who was an experienced Man, bid us prepare for a Storm, which accordingly happened the next Day. I shall not trouble the Reader with the Particulars of our Management at Sea during this Storm, which was followed by a strong West South-West Wind. We were carried, by Computation, about Five Hundred Leagues to the East, so that our oldest Sailors knew not in what Part of the World we were. Our Provisions held out well, our Ship was staunch, and Crew in good Health, but we lay in the utmost Distress

to BROBDINGNAG. 77

Distress for Water. We chose to hold the same Course, rather than turn Northerly, which might have brought us into the frozen Seas. On the 16th Day of *June* 1703, a Boy on the Top-mast discover'd Land. On the 17th we came in full View of it; on the South Side, whereof was a small Neck of Land, jutting into the Sea, and a Creek too shallow for a Ship of above One Hundred Tun. We cast Anchor, and the Captain sent the Boat, with a Dozen Men armed, to seek for Water. I desired to go along with them that I might see the Country. When we came ashore, we saw no River or Spring, or Sign of Inhabitants. Our Men wandered about for Water, but I walked alone, about a Mile another Way, to observe the Country, which was barren and rocky. I had satisfy'd my Curiosity, and was returning towards the Creek, when I perceived our Men in the Boat rowing for Life to the Ship. I was going to hallow after them, when I observ'd a huge Creature walking towards them as fast as he could: He waded not much deeper than his Knees, and took vast Strides: But our Men having the Start of him, and the Bottom being rocky, he could not overtake the Boat. I ran back the Way I

first went, and getting upon a steep Hill, had some Prospect of the Country. It was well cultivated, but I was surprized at the Length of the Grass for Hay, which was above Twenty Foot high. I found a high Road, for so I thought, though it served the Inhabitants for a Foot Path, through a Field of Barley. Here I walked about, but could see nothing for the Height of the Corn, it being at least Forty Foot high. I was an Hour walking to the End of this Field, which was fenced with a Hedge a Hundred and Twenty Foot high; the Height of the Trees I could not compute. At the End of this Field there was a Stile to pass into the next, which I could not climb. It had four Steps six Foot distance each, with a Stone at the Top, twenty Foot high. I was endeavouring to find a Gap in the Hedge, when I discover'd one of the Inhabitants of the Size with him I had seen follow our Boat. He seemed as tall as an ordinary Church Steeple, and took about ten Yards at a Stride. Being in the utmost Astonishment, I ran to hide my self among the Corn, where I saw him at the Top of the Stile, and looking back, he called in a Voice like the Noise of Thunder: Whereupon seven Monsters like him-
self

self came towards him with reaping Hooks in their Hands, each as large as six Scythes. These, by their Cloaths, seem'd to be Labourers to the first, and upon some Words he spoke, they began to reap the Corn in the Field where I lay. I kept at as great a Distance as I could, but was forced to move with great Difficulty, the Stalks of the Corn growing so close that I could hardly squeeze between. I went on forward till I came to a Place where the Corn was so interwoven with the Rain and Wind, that I could go no farther; at the same Time the Reapers were within a Hundred Yards of me. Being dispirited with Toil, and overcome with Grief and Despair, I lay down between two Ridges, and heartily wish'd I might end my Days there. I bemoan'd my desolate Widow, and fatherless Children, and lamented my Folly in attempting another Voyage. In this Dilemma I reflected on *Lilliput*, whose Inhabitants look'd on me as the greatest Prodigy in the World, where I was able to draw an Imperial Fleet in my Hand, with other Actions which will be recorded for ever in that Empire, and hardly believed by Posterity, though attested by Millions. What Mortification must it be to appear to them now

as inconsiderable as a *Lilliputian* among us? This was not the greatest of my Misfortune, for as Human Creatures are observed to be cruel in Proportion to their Bulk, I expected to be a Mouthful to the first who should lay hold on me. Philosophers rightly observe, That nothing is great or little but by Comparison: And perhaps the *Lilliputians* might find a People as diminutive to them as they were to me, and this huge Race of Mortals even be over-match'd in some unknown Part of the World. Amazed and confounded as I lay, I could not forbear these Reflections: But one of the Reapers being within ten Yards of me, I apprehended that I should be crush'd to Death by his next Step, or cut in two with his Reaping-Hook: Therefore, when I perceiv'd him going to move, I cry'd out as loud as Fear could make me, whereupon he trod short, and looking round him, at last espied me on the Ground. He paused a while like one who endeavours to take hold of a small dangerous Animal in such manner that it cannot bite him. At length he ventur'd to take me up behind, by the Middle, between his Fore-finger and Thumb, and brought me within Three Yards of his Eyes, that
he

he might view me distinctly : And holding me Sixty Foot from the Ground, I resolved not to struggle, though he pinched my Sides, for fear of slipping between his Fingers. All I ventur'd was, to lift up my Eyes toward the Sun, and my Hands in a supplicating Posture, and to utter something in a Tone suitable to my Condition : For I apprehended every Moment he would dash me to the Ground, as we do hateful Animals we have a Mind to destroy. But as good Fortune would have it, he appear'd much pleas'd with my Voice and Gestures, and seem'd to wonder at my Words, though he did not understand them. In the mean time, by my Groans and Tears, and other Signs, I let him know how much I was hurt by the Pressure of his Finger and Thumb : He seem'd to apprehend me, and lifting up the Lappet of his Coat, he put me into it, and ran immediately with me to his Master the Farmer, who was the same Person I had first seen in the Field. The Farmer, who had receiv'd some Account of me from his Servants, took a Piece of small Straw, and lifted up the Lappets of my Coat with it, which it seems he thought was a natural Covering ; and blew my Hairs aside the better to see my Face.

He called his Hinds about him, and asked them (as I was afterward told) Whether they had ever seen in the Fields a small Creature that resembled me? He then placed me gently on the Ground upon all Four, but I immediately got up and walked slowly about, to shew I had no Intent of running away: They all fat round me the better to observe my Actions. I pulled off my Hat to the Farmer, and bowed: I fell on my Knees, and lifted up my Hands and Eyes, and spoke several Words as loud as I could. I took a Purse of Gold out of my Pocket, which I presented to him. He received it in the Palm of his Hand, looked nearly at it, and turn'd it about with a Pin he took from his Sleeve, but could make nothing of it: Whereupon I made a Sign that he should put his Hand on the Ground, which he did, and I poured the Money into his Hand; they were *Spanish Pistoles*: But he wetted his Finger with the Tip of his Tongue, and took up one of the largest Pieces, but seem'd not to know what they were. He made Signs that I might put them in my Pocket, which I thought was best, after I had offer'd them several times. The Farmer seem'd convinc'd I was a rational Creature, and spoke

spoke to me; but the Sound of his Voice, though articulate, pierced my Ears confusedly: I answer'd him, but to no Purpose. He then sent his Men to Work, and taking his Handkerchief, he spread it on his Hand, and made Signs for me to step into it. I obeyed him, and he wrapt me up so that I could not fall out, and carry'd me Home to his House. He call'd his Wife to shew me to her, but she scream'd, and ran back, like the Women in *England* at the Sight of a Mouse. But she was soon reconcil'd to me, when she had seen my Behaviour to her Husband. About Twelve at Noon, a Servant brought in Dinner, which was one substantial Piece of Meat, brought in a Dish, about Four and Twenty Foot Diameter. The Company were the Farmer, and his Wife, and three Children, and a Grandmother. When they were sat, the Farmer placed me upon the Table, some Distance from him. The Height of the Table being Thirty Foot, I kept as far from the Edge as I could, for fear of falling. The Wife minced me some Meat, and crumbled some Bread upon it, and placed it before me on a Trencher. I made them a low Bow, took out my Knife and Fork, and fell to eat, which gave

gave them great Satisfaction. A small Dram Cup was brought to me, fill'd with Drink, which held Three Gallons. I took it up, with much Difficulty, in both Hands, and in *English* drank to their good Healths, which made the Company laugh so loud, that I was stunn'd at the Noise. The Liquor was pleasant, and tasted like Cyder. The Master made me a Sign to come to the Edge of his Trencher, but walking with Surprize, I stumbled at a Crust, and fell on my Face, without receiving any Hurt. I got up, and finding the good People concern'd, I took off my Hat and gave three Huzza's, to shew I had got no Mischief. But advancing toward my Master (as I shall hereafter call him) his youngest Son took me by the Legs and lifted me so high, that every Limb of me trembled, but his Father snatching me from him, gave him a Box on the Ear sufficient to fell an *European* Troop of Horse. I was afraid the Boy should resent my being the Occasion of the Blow, and therefore made Signs to his Father to pardon him. The Father complied, whereupon I went and kissed his Hand, and he made his Son stroke me gently. In the midst of the Dinner, the Cat jump'd upon my Mistress's Lap;

Lap; I heard a Noise behind me like Stocking-Weavers at Work, which afterward I found was only the Purring of the Cat. She appear'd three times bigger than an Ox, with a Countenance so fierce, that it altogether discomposed me, though she was Fifty Foot from me: But it happened there was no Danger, for when my Master placed me very near her, she took no Notice of me, and I walked without Fear five or six times before the Head of the Cat, and came within half a Yard of her, whereupon she drew back, as if she was most afraid of me. I had less Apprehension of the Dogs which came into the Room, as is usual in Farmer's Houses, one of which, a Mastiff, was equal in Bulk to four Elephants, and a Greyhound somewhat taller than the Mastiff, but not so large. We had no sooner dined, than the Nurse brought in a Child, about a Year old, who so squall'd at the Sight of me, that it might be heard from *London-Bridge* to *Chelsea*, to get me for a Plaything. The Mother took me up, and put me toward the Child, who presently seiz'd me by the Middle, and got my Head in his Mouth; but I roar'd so loud, that the Urchin let me drop, and had infallibly broke my Neck, if the Mother had

had not held her Apron under me. The Nurse, to quiet the Babe, made use of a Rattle, which was a hollow Vessel with large Stones in it, and fastened about the Child's Middle with a Cable. This not answering, she was obliged to give it suck: And, I must confess, I never was more disgusted than at the Sight of her Breast, which stood prominent Six Foot, and was Sixteen in Circumference. The Nipple was half as big as my Head, but of that Hue, as well as the Dug, with Pimples and Freckles, that nothing could appear more nauseous. This made me reflect on the fair Skins of our *English* Ladies, which appear beautiful to the naked Eye, but through a magnifying Glass coarse and uneven. I remember when I was at *Lilliput*, the Complexions of those diminutive People appear'd to me the fairest in the World; and talking upon this Subject with a Man of Learning, who was my intimate Friend, he told me, I look'd much smother when he saw me from the Ground, than when I had him in my Hand, and confessed, that at first Sight I was shocking to him: On the other Hand, discoursing of the Ladies in that Country, he told me of Imperfections which I could not distinguish with my

my Eyes: I confess this Reflection was obvious enough, which however I could not forbear, lest the Reader might think these vast Creatures actually deformed: For to do them Justice, they are a comely People, and my Master, although a Farmer, when I beheld him from the Height of Sixty Foot, appear'd very well proportion'd. When Dinner was over, my Master went out to his Labourers, and left strict charge with his Wife, to take Care of me. My Mistress perceiving I was sleepy, put me to Bed, and cover'd me with a clean white Handkerchief, larger and coarser than the Main-sail of a Man of War. I slept and dreamed I was at Home, with my Family, which encreased my Sorrows when I waked and found my self alone, in a Room of a vast Extent and Height, and in a Bed Twenty Yards wide, and Eight Yards high from the Floor. I was pressed, by some natural Necessities which required me to get down, but durst not presume to call; it would have been in vain if I had, the Kitchen, where the Family was, being at a great Distance from the Room where I lay. While I was under these Circumstances two Rats, of the Size of a large Mastiff, crept upon

on the Bed, one of them came up to my Face; whereupon I rose, and drew out my Hanger, to defend my self: I apprehended so much Danger from them, that I ripped up the Belly of one who held his Fore-feet at my Collar: The other seeing this, ran away, but not without a large Cut on his Back. These Creatures were so nimble and fierce, that I should have been infallibly kill'd, if I had taken my Belt off before I went to Sleep. I measured the Tail of the dead Rat, and found it two Yards long, wanting an Inch. My Mistress, who came presently after into the Room, was surprized to see me bloody: But taking me up in her Hand, I pointed to the dead Rat, and she immediately called the Maid to take it up with a Pair of Tongues, and throw it out of the Window. I was pressed to do what another could not do for me, and endeavour'd to make my Mistress understand me, which, after using many Signs, I effected at last. The good Woman took me up in her Hand, and going into the Garden with me, set me upon the Ground. I went a good Distance from her, and hiding my self behind two Leaves of Sorrel, I there discharged

charged the Superfluities of Nature. I hope the Reader will excuse my dwelling so long on such Particulars, which, though they may appear low to a vulgar Mind, may be applied by a Philosopher to the Benefit of Mankind; which has been my sole Design in the Publication of these Travels, wherein I have chiefly consulted Truth, without affecting any Ornaments of Learning or Style.





C H A P. II.

*A Description of the Farmer's Daughter.
The Author is carried to a Market Town,
and then to the Metropolis. The Parti-
culars of his Journey.*



Y Mistress had a Daughter of Nine Years old, dextrous at her Needle, and dressing a Baby. Her Mother and she contriv'd to set up Doll's Cradle for me against Night. This they put into a Cabinet Drawer, and placed it upon a Hanging-Shelf for fear of the Rats. I had no other Bed during my stay there, though it was made more convenient, as I could make my Wants known. This Girl would dress and undress me after she had once seen me do it; but I never troubled her when she would suffer me to do either my self. She was likewise my School-mistress, to teach me the Language, very good-natur'd, and not above Forty Foot high, being little of her Age. She gave me the
Name

Name of *Grildrig*, which the Family took up, and afterwards the rest of the Kingdom. The Word imports what the *English* call *Mannikin*. I call'd her *Glumdalclitch*, or little Nurse, and should be ungrateful in omitting this honourable mention of her Care and Tenderneſs, which I wiſh I could requite, inſtead of being the unhappy, though innocent, Inſtrument of her Diſgrace, which I have too much Reaſon to fear. It began to be known that my Maſter had found a ſtrange Animal in the Fields, of Human Shape, which ſeemed to ſpeak in a Language of his own, and had learned ſeveral Words of theirs, performed all the Actions of an Human Creature, was fine ſhaped, and had the ſmoothest Complexion imaginable. This Talk induced a Neighbour, who lived juſt by, to viſit my Maſter, on purpoſe to inquire into the Truth of the Story. I was produced, and ſet upon the Table, where I did as I was commanded. This Man, who was old and dim-ſighted, put on his Spectacles to view me the better, at which I could not forbear laughing, for his Eyes looked like a Full Moon ſhining into a Room at two Windows. Our People diſcovering the Occaſion of my Laughter, bore me Company, at
which,

which, the old Fellow was Fool enough to be angry. He had the Character of a Miser ; and I believe he was, by the Advice he gave my Master, to shew me as a Sight the next Market-Day, at a Town, which was half an-Hour's Ride, being about Two and Twenty Miles off. I guessed there was some Mischief hatching, by my Master and his Friend whispering together, which my little Nurse discovered to me next Morning ; and laying me on her Bosom, fell a weeping, with Shame and Grief. She apprehended I should be hurt, by the Rudeness of the vulgar People ; and knowing how modest I was, and of what nice Honour, she thought I should conceive it an Indignity to be exposed, as a publick Spectacle, for Money to the meanest Sort of People. For my Part, I was less concern'd than my Nurse ; hoping, one Day, to recover my Liberty ; and as to the Disgrace of being carried about for a Monster, I considered, I was a Stranger in the Country, and that No-body could charge me with it, when I returned to *England*. My Master took his Friends Advice ; and next Market-day, carried me in a Box, with my Nurse behind him, on a Pillion : The Box was close, with a little Door for me to go in and out, and a few Gimblet-holes

holes to let in Air. The Girl had taken Care, to put the Quilt of her Baby's Bed into it, for me to lie down upon: However, I was violently shaken, and disordered, by the Pace of the Horse, who went about Forty Foot at every Step. My Master alighted at the Inn he frequented; and, consulting with the Inn-keeper, he hired the common Cryer to give Notice, that a strange Creature was to be seen, at the Sign of the Green-Eagle, not so big as a *Splacknuck*, (an Animal in that Country finely shaped, and about Six Foot high) resembling an human Creature; could speak several Words, and perform a Hundred diverting Tricks. I was set upon a Table, near Three hundred Foot square, in a large Room, with my little Nurse standing by me, upon a low Stool. I walked about, as the Girl commanded me, and answered, what Questions she asked me, as loud as I could. I addressed myself to the Company, to whom I paid my Respects, and told them, they were welcome. I took up a Thimble-full of Liquor, which *Glumdalclitch* gave me, and drank to their Health, and flourish'd my Hanger, after the Manner of an *English* Gladiator. I was, that Day, shewn to Twelve different Companies, and repeated the

the same Fopperies to each, till I was half dead, with Fatigue and Vexation. My Master suffered No-body to touch me, but my Nurse, and had set Benches round the Table, to keep me out of every Body's Reach. However, an unlucky School-boy, threw a Hazle Nut at my Head, as big as a Pompion, which came with that Force, as to have knocked out my Brains, if it had hit me. But he was well beaten, and turned out of the Room. Publick Notice was given, that I should be shewn the next Market-day; and, in the mean time, my Master prepared a more convenient Vehicle for me, which he had Reason to do; for I was so tired with my first Journey, and entertaining the Company, that I could hardly stand or speak for Three Days. I had no Rest at home, from the neighbouring Gentry's continually flocking to see me, (except *Wednesday*, which is their Sabbath) although I was not carried to the Town. My Master, finding me so profitable to him, resolved to carry me, to the most considerable Cities in the Kingdom; and accordingly, provided Things necessary for a long Journey. Upon the 17th of *August*, 1703, about Two Months after my Arrival, we set out for the Metropolis, situated near
the

the Middle of the Empire, and about Three Thousand Miles distant from us. *Glumdalclitch* rode behind her Father, and carried me on her Lap, in a Box tyed about her Waist, which she had made as easy for me as she could. We had no other Company, but a Boy of the House, who carried the Luggage. My Master designed to shew me in all the Towns by the Way; therefore, we made short Journeys, of not above Seven or Eight-score Miles a Day. My Nurse often took me out of the Box to give me Air, and shew me the Country; but always held me fast by the Leading-string. We past over Five or Six Rivers, as large as the *Nile* and the *Ganges*; and there was hardly a Rivulet so small as the *Thames* at *London-Bridge*. Our Journey lasted Ten Weeks; and I was shewn in Eighteen large Towns, besides Villages and private Families. We reach'd the Metropolis, call'd *Lorbrulgrud*; or, The Pride of the Universe, on the 26th of *October*. My Master took a Lodging in the principal Street in the City, and put out Bills, containing a Description of my Person and Parts; and hired a Room proper for the Entertainment I was to give. I was shewn Ten Times a Day, to the Satisfaction and Admiration

miration of the People. My Nurse had carried a little Book in her Pocket, not much larger than *Saufon's Atlas*, out of this, at our Leisure-Hours, she so far instructed me in the Language, that, in some Places, I could explain a Sentence.





CHAP. IV.

The Author is sent for to Court. The Queen buys him, and presents him to the King. He disputes with his Majesty's great Scholars. An Apartment at Court provided for him. He is in Favour with the Queen. He maintains the Honour of his own Country, and quarrels with the Queen's Dwarf.



THE frequent Labours I daily underwent, had so impair'd my Health, that I was almost reduced to a Skeleton; which the Farmer observing, was resolved to make as good a Hand of me as he could. While he was thus Reasoning, a *Slardral*, or Gentleman-Usher, came from Court, commanding my Master to bring me thither immediately, for the Diversion of the Queen, and Ladies; some of whom having seen me before, had reported strange Things of my Behaviour, and good Sense.

F

Her

Her Majesty and Attendants, were delighted with my Demeanor; I fell on my Knees, and begg'd the Honour of kissing her Imperial Foot, but she graciously offered her little Finger, which I embraced with both Arms, and put the Tip of it to my Lip with the utmost Respect. She asked me several Questions, which I answered in as few Words as I could; and, among others, Whether I should be content to live at Court? I answered, That, if I was at my own Disposal, I would gladly devote myself to her Majesty's Service. She then asked my Master, Whether he would sell me at a good Price? he, thinking I could not live long, demanded a Thousand Pieces of Gold, which was immediately paid him; which, though it was in very large Pieces, was, allowing the Proportion of all Things in that Country, to those in *Europe*, about the Value of a Thousand Guineas. I then said, that since I was her Majesty's humble Slave, I begged the Favour, that *Glumdalclitch*, who had always tended me so carefully, might be admitted into her Majesty's Service, and continue to be my Nurse, and Instructor. Her Majesty agreed, and the Farmer consented, in hopes of his Daughter's Preferment. The Girl was overjoy'd, and my late

late Master withdrew, bidding me farewell; and saying, he left me in good Service: I made no Answer, but returned him a slight Bow. The Queen, when he was gone, having observed my Coldness, asked me the Reason. I said, I was only oblig'd to him, for sparing the Life of an innocent Creature, for which he was sufficiently recompens'd by shewing me, and the Price he had sold me at: That the Life I had led, by continually entertaining the Rabble, had so altered my Health, that if he had not thought my Life in Danger, her Majesty would not have bought me so cheap; but hoped, since I was under the Protection of so good an Empress, his Apprehensions would prove groundless; for I already found my Spirits revive, by the Influence of her august Presence. The Queen, allowing for my Defect in speaking, was surpriz'd at so much Wit and good Sense, in so diminutive an Animal. She took me in her Hands, and carried me to the King, who being a Prince of much Gravity, and not well observing my Shape, asked her, how long she had been fond of a *Splacknuck*, for such he took me to be, as I lay upon her Hand. But this Princess, who has abundance of Wit and Good-humour, set me on my Feet, upon the Scrut-

tore, and commanded me to give an Account of my self, which, after I had done, was confirmed by *Glumdalclitch*, with all that had passed since my first coming. The King, though a Man of Learning in Philosophy and Mathematicks, when he saw me walk, and view'd my Shape, conceiv'd I might be a Piece of Clockwork (which is arriv'd to great Perfection in that Country) contriv'd by some ingenious Artist: But, when he heard me speak, he could not conceal his Astonishment. He was not satisfied with the Account I had given of my coming into his Kingdom, but thought they had taught me a set of Words to make me sell at a higher Price: Upon which he asked several Questions, and still received rational Answers, defective only by a foreign Accent, and the want of knowing the Language. His Majesty sent for three great Scholars; who all agreed, after they had strictly examin'd me, that I was not produced according to the regular Laws of Nature, as being incapable of preserving my Life, either by Swiftmess, or climbing of Trees, or digging Holes in the Earth. They observed me to be a carnivorous Animal by my Teeth, yet most Quadrupeds being an Over-match for me, they

they could not imagine how I supported my self unless I fed upon Snails, which, by many learned Arguments they offered to evince, was impossible. One of these Virtuoso's seemed to think I might be an Embrio, or abortive Birth. But this Opinion was rejected, from the compleat Formation of my Limbs, and my having lived several Years, which appeared by my Beard, the Stumps whereof they plainly discover'd by a magnifying Glass. They allow'd me to be too little for a Dwarf, the smallest ever known in that Kingdom, being Thirty Foot high. After long Debate, they concluded I was only a *Relplum Scalcatb*, which literally interpreted is *Lusus Naturæ*; a Determination agreeable to the modern Philosophy of *Europe*: Whose Professors, to avoid the occult Qualities of *Aristotle*, have endeavour'd to hide their Ignorance by this wonderful Solution. After this decisive Conclusion, I desir'd to be heard, and addressing my self to his Majesty, assured him that I came from a Country, which abounded with Millions of my own Stature, in both Sexes, and with Animals and Trees in Proportion; and where I could consequently get Sustenance, and defend my self as well as any of his Ma-

F 3

jesty's

jeſty's Subjects could do here: And this I thought a full Answer to thoſe Gentlemen's Arguments. To this they reply'd with Contempt, That the Farmer had taught me my Leſſon well. The King, who had a better Underſtanding, diſmiſſed theſe learned Men, and ſent for the Farmer, who was ſtill in Town, and having confronted him, the Girl, and my ſelf, began to think it might poſſibly be true, and deſir'd the Queen to order that particular Care ſhould be taken of me, and *Glumdalclitch* ſtill continue in her Office. A convenient Apartment was provided for her at Court, with a Governeſs to take care of her Education: A Maid to dreſs her, and two Servants for menial Offices. The Care of me was left wholly to her ſelf. The Queen order'd her own Cabinet-maker, an ingenious Artiſt, to make me a Box for a Bed-chamber as *Glumdalclitch* and I ſhould direct, which was furniſhed in three Weeks, and a Bed put in it by her Majeſty's Upholſter. A nice Workman, famous for little Curioſities, undertook to make me two Chairs with Backs and Frames of a Subſtance like Ivory; and two Tables, with a Cabinet to put my Things in. The Room was quilted on all Sides, to prevent my
being

being hurt by any Jolt when I went in a Coach. I had a Lock to my Door, which, though the smallest ever seen in that Country, was such as we have to the Gates of a Gentleman's House in *England*. I kept the Key my self, for fear *Glumdaclitch* should lose it. I was order'd a Suit of Cloaths of the thinnest Silk that could be had, which was not much thicker than a Blanket. They were made after the Fashion of the Country, and are a very grave decent Habit. The Queen grew so fond of me, that I was always placed upon the Table, at her left Elbow, while she dined, with a Table and Chair for my self; my Nurse standing by, to assist and take care of me. I had an entire set of Silver Dishes and Plates, which were like those in a Toy-shop, for the Furniture of a Baby-house, if compar'd with the Queen's. These my Nurse kept in a Box in her Pocket, and always clean'd them her self. No-body dined with the Queen but the two Princesses Royal, the elder sixteen Yeats old, and the younger Thirteen. Her Majesty used to put a Bit of Meat upon one of my Dishes, out of which I carved for my self, and delighted to see me eat. The Queen, who had but a weak Stomach,

made but one Mouthful of as much as would serve a Dozen *English* Farmers. She would craunch the Bones of the Wing of a Lark, though six times bigger than an *English* Turkey, and put a Bit of Bread in her Mouth as big as two Twelve-penny Loaves. She drank out of a Golden Cup, above a Hoghead at a Draught. Her Knives were two Yards long, and Spoons, and other Instruments, in Proportion. Every *Wednesday*, (which was their Sabbath, as I observ'd before) the King and Queen, with the Royal Issue, dine together in his Majesty's Apartment, to whom I was now become a Favourite. At these Times my little Chair and Table were placed at his left Hand. He took a Pleasure in enquiring into the Manners, Religion, Laws, and Government, of *Europe*, wherein I gave him the best Account I could, who made admirable Reflections, and Observations, upon all I said. In talking of my own beloved Country; of our Trade and Wars by Sea and Land, our Schisms in Religion, and Parties in State; he took me up in his right Hand, and gently stroaking me with the other, after a violent Fit of Laughter, he ask'd me whether I was *Whig* or *Tory*? Then turning to his prime Minister who waited behind

behind him, observed how contemptible Human Grandeur was, which could be mimicked by such diminutive Mortals as I; And yet, said he, I dare engage these Creatures have their Titles of Honour, their Houses and Cities, and make a Figure in Dress and Equipage: They Love, Fight, Cheat, and Betray; and thus he went on, while my Colour came and went with Indignation, to hear our Country, the Mistress of Arts, and Arms; the Scourge of *France*; the Arbitress of *Europe*; the Seat of Piety, Honour, and Truth, so contemptibly treated. But not being in a Condition to resent Injuries, upon mature Deliberation, I doubted whether I was injured or no: For I had been so long accustomed to the Conversation and Magnitude of this People, that if I had beheld a Company of *English* Lords and Ladies, in their Birth-day Cloaths, bowing and prating to one another, to say the Truth, I should have been tempted to laugh at them, as much as the King, and his Grandees, did at me. Neither could I forbear laughing when I compar'd my self with the Queen in a Looking-glass, and began really to imagine I was dwindled several Degrees below my usual Size. Nothing mortified

me so much as the Insolence of the Queen's Dwarf, who would swagger and look big as he pass'd by me, and seldom failed of reflecting upon my Littleness, against which I had no other Revenge than to call him Brother. One Day, at Dinner, this little Chub was so angry at something I had said, that, raising himself upon the Frame of the Queen's Chair, he took me up by the Middle, and let me drop into a large Silver Bowl of Cream, and then ran away. It might have gone hard with me if I had not been a good Swimmer, for my Nurse was at the other End of the Room, and the Queen so affrighted she could not assist me: At last my little Nurse ran and took me out after I had swallow'd a Quart of Cream. I was put to Bed, but receiv'd no other Damage than the spoiling my Cloaths. The Dwarf was severely whip'd, and was forced to drink up the Cream as a farther Punishment: And her Majesty soon after gave him to a Lady of Quality, so that I saw him no more, to my great Satisfaction. He had served me a scurvy Trick once before, which set the Queen a laughing, although she was heartily vexed at the same time. Her Majesty
having

having emptied a Marrow-bone upon her Plate, set the Bone upright in the Dish, as it stood before; the Dwarf taking his Opportunity, while my Nurse was gone to the Side-board, got upon the Stool she stood on to take care of me at Meals; took me up in both Hands, and squeezing my Legs together, wedged them into the Marrow-bone, above my Waist, where I stuck for a Minute, before they knew what was become of me; but, as Princes seldom get their Victuals hot, I had no other Damage than a greasy Pair of Breeches and Stockings. The Dwarf, at my Entreaty, had no other Punishment than a sound Whipping. The Queen frequently reproached me of my Fearfulness, and asked me, Whether the People of my Country were as great Cowards as my self? This was occasion'd by my starting at the Flies when they came upon my Face, each of them as big as a *Dunstable* Lark. They would sometimes settle upon my Victuals, and leave their Excrement, or Spawn, behind; which was visible to me, though not to the Natives of the Country. I could easily trace the viscous Matter, which our Naturalists tell us enables those Creatures to walk with their Feet upwards, up-
om

on a Ceiling. My only Remedy against these detestable Animals was to cut them in Pieces with my Knife, as they flew in the Air, wherein my Dexterity was much admired. I remember one Morning, as my Box was set upon the Window to give me Air, I lifting up one of my Sashes, and sitting down to eat a Piece of sweet Cake for my Breakfast, above Twenty Wasps came into my Room humming louder than the Drones of as many Bagpipes. Some seized my Cake, and carried it Piece-meal away; others flew about my Head and Face: At length I rose and drew my Hanger, and attack'd them as they flew: I killed Four, and the rest got away, upon which I presently shut my Window. They were as large as Partridges, with Stings an Inch and Half long. I carefully preserved them, and when I came to *England* presented three to *Gresham College*, and kept the Fourth for my self.





C H A P. IV.

The Country describ'd. A Proposal for correcting modern Maps. The King's Palace, and some Account of the Metropolis. The Author's Way of travelling. The chief Temple describ'd.



Intend to give the Reader a short Description of this Country as far as I travell'd in it, which was not above Two Thousand Miles from the Metropolis. The whole Extent of that Princes Dominions is Six Thousand Miles in Length, and from Three to Five in Breadth: Whence, I conclude, our Geographers mistake, by supposing nothing but Sea between *Japan* and *California*, but I was always of Opinion, that there must be a Ballance of Earth to counterpoise the great Continent of *Tartary*, and their Maps should be corrected by adding this vast Tract of Land to the N. W. Parts of *America*. The Kingdom

dom is a Peninsula, bounded by the Ocean on all Sides, except the North-East, where it is terminated by a Ridge of Mountains Thirty Miles high, which are impassible by reason of the Vulcanoës. And those Parts of the Coasts, where the Rivers issue, are so very rocky, and the Sea so rough, that there is no venturing in their smallest Boats, so that this Nation is excluded all Commerce with the rest of the World. But the large Rivers are cover'd with Vessels, and have great plenty of Fish. For they seldom have any from the Sea, because the Sea-Fish are of the same Size with those in *Europe*; hence it is manifest, that Nature is entirely confin'd to this Continent in the Production of Plants and Animals of so extraordinary a Bulk: However, they sometimes take a Whale which happens to be dashed against the Rocks, which the common People feed very heartily on: They are sometimes so large, that a Man can hardly carry one upon his Shoulders; I saw one in a Dish, at the King's Table, which passed for a Rarity, but his Majesty was disgusted at the Bigness of it, although I have seen larger in *Greenland*. The Country is well inhabited, and contains One and Fifty Cities, near One Hundred

to BROBDINGNAG. III

dred wall'd Towns, besides Villages. It may be sufficient to satisfy the Reader to describe *Lorbrulgrud*. Almost two equal Parts of this City stand on each Side a River, which runs through it. There are Eighty Thousand Houses, and above Six Hundred Thousand Inhabitants; it is about Fifty-four *English* Miles in Length, and Two and a Half in Breadth, as I measured it my self from a Map, which was laid on the Ground on purpose for me.

The Royal Palace is no regular Edifice, but an Heap of Building, about Seven Miles round. The chief Rooms are Two Hundred and Forty Foot high, and long and broad in Proportion. My Nurse and I had a Coach allow'd us, wherein her Governess often took her to see the Town, who always carry'd me with her in my Box, although she sometimes, at my own Desire, would take me upon her Hand, that I might see the Houses and People more conveniently. Our Coach was about the Square of *Westminster-Hall*, but not so high. One Day the Governess ordering the Coach to stop, the Beggars watching their Opportunity, came to the Sides of the Coach, and discovered such horrid Spectacles, that I shall avoid describing
for

for the Sake of my Reader, lest he should find them Nauseous. Besides the large Box, in which I was carried, the Queen ordered a smaller one to be made, of about Twelve Foot square, and Ten high, with a Window to Three of the Sides, latticed with Iron Wire on the Out-side, to prevent Accidents in a long Journey; on that Side which had no Window were fixed two strong Staples, through which, when I had a Mind to go on Horseback, the Servant put his Belt and buckled me to his Waist. This was the Office of some grave trusty Servant, whom I could confide in, whether I attended the Queen, or paid a Visit to some great Man of the Kingdom, among whom I began to be esteem'd; but more, I suppose, upon his Majesty's Account, than any real Merit of my own. When I had a Mind to see the Town, *Glumdal-clitch* carried me on her Lap, in my travelling Closet, in an open Sedan, born by Four Men, and attended by two others in the Queen's Livery. The Girl would often make the Bearers stop, to satisfy the Curiosity of the People, who crowded to see me. I was very desirous to see the chief Temple, and particularly the Tower
belong-

belonging to it, which was reckoned the
 highest in the Kingdom. Accordingly one
 Day my Nurse carried me, but I came
 back disappointed; for although it be
 Three Thousand Foot high from the
 Ground to the highest Pinnacle, yet al-
 lowing the Difference between the Size of
 those People and us, the Steeple at *Salis-*
bury is higher in Proportion; but it hath
 that in Beauty and Strength, which it
 wants in Height; for the Walls are near
 a Hundred Foot thick, made with hewn
 Stone Forty Foot square, and adorned with
 Statues of Gods and Emperors on all Sides.
 I measured the little Finger of one which
 I happened to find below among the Rub-
 bish, and found it exactly Four Foot and
 an Inch in length. My Nurse carried it
 Home, to put among other Trinkets, of
 which Children are fond at her Age. The
 King's Kitchen is a noble Building, vault-
 ed at Top, and about Six Hundred Foot
 high. The great Oven is not quite so
 wide as the Cupola of *St. Paul's*, by Ten
 Paces, having measured it since my Re-
 turn. But was I to describe the Grate,
 Pots, Kettles, and other Utensils, a Cri-
 tick would be apt to say I talked like a
 Traveller. To avoid which Censure, I
 fear

fear I have run into the other Extreme ;
and if this Treatise should happen to be
translated into the Language of *Brobding-*
nag, and transmitted thither, they would
charge me with having given a false and
diminutive Representation.





C H A P. V.

Several Adventures that happened to the Author. The Execution of a Criminal. The Author shews his Skill in Navigation.



Should have lived happily enough in that Country, had not my Stature made me liable to several ridiculous Accidents, some of which I shall venture to relate. My Nurse, who often carried me into the Gardens of the Court, in my smaller Box would sometimes take me out and hold me in her Hand, or set me down to walk ; she did so once a little before the Dwarf left the Queen ; he followed us into the Gardens, and as we happened to be together under some dwarf Apple-Trees, I, to shew my Wit, made some Allusion between him and the Trees, which he happened to take ; whereupon the unlucky Rogue watching his

his Opportunity, when I was immediately under one of them, shook it directly over my Head, and one of the Apples, as I stoop'd, hit me on the Back, and knock'd me flat to the Ground, but I received no other hurt. Another Day *Glumdalclitch* set me upon a Grass-plat, while she was walking with her Governess at some Distance. In the mean Time, a Shower of Hail happen'd, which struck me to the Ground, and when I was down, I crawl'd to a Border of Lemon-Thyme, and shelter'd my self; but so bruised from Head to Foot, that I cou'd not go abroad in Ten Days. Neither is it a Wonder, since Nature observing the same Proportion in all her Actions, a Hail-stone is near Eighteen Hundred Times larger in that Country, than in *Europe*.

But a more dangerous Accident happened to me in the same Garden, when I thought my self in a very secure Place, which my Nurse had chosen for me, and went to another part of the Garden with her Governess, and some Ladies of her Acquaintance. While she was gone, a Spaniel, belonging to the Gardeners, happened to range near the Place where I lay, and following his Scent, at last came to me, and taking me up in his Mouth,

ran

ran with me to his Master ; he did me no harm, or even my Cloaths. The poor Gardener, who knew me, and had a Kindness for me, took me up, and asked me how I did, but I was so affrighted, I could not speak a Word. I came to myself in a little Time, and he carried me safe to my Nurse, who had been at the Place where she left me, and was in cruel Agonies that I did not appear, or answer when she call'd. She reprimanded the Gardener on account of his Dog ; but the thing was hush'd, and never known at Court, for the Girl was afraid of the Queen's Anger, and it was not for my Reputation that such a Story should go about. This Accident absolutely determined my Nurse never to trust me out of her Sight for the future. I had been long afraid of this Resolution, and therefore conceal'd several unlucky Accidents, which happen'd to me when I was alone. I cannot tell whether I was most pleased or mortify'd, to observe, in those solitary Walks, that the smallest Birds were not afraid of me, and would eat their Food as if no Body was near them. A Thrush once had the Confidence to take a Piece of Cake out of my Hand, which my Nurse had given me for Breakfast ; and when I attempted to

to catch any of them, they would pick at my Fingers, and turn back to look for Worms or Snails, as they did before. But one Day I took a Stick, and threw it at a Linnet with all my Strength, so luckily, that I knocked it down, and seizing it with both Hands, ran with it in Triumph to my Nurse. The Bird being only stun'd recovered himself, and so boxed me about the Head with his Wings, though I held him out at Arms-length, that I had a Mind to let him go ; but one of the Servants came and wrung his Head off, and I had him next Day for Dinner. This Linnet was as large as an *English* Swan. The Ladies of Honour often invited my Nurse to their Apartments, and desired she would bring me along with her. They would often strip me, and lay me naked upon their Bosoms ; at which I was disgusted from the offensive Smell that came from them. I would not be thought to mention this to the Disadvantage of the Ladies, (for whom I have a great Respect) but conceive my Sense was acute in Proportion to my Size, and that those Persons were as agreeable to each other there, as we are in *England*. To prove what I suppos'd, I remember when I was at *Liliput*, an intimate Friend, one warm Day, complain'd

complain'd I had a strong Smell about me, although I am as little Faulty that way as most of my Sex. What gave me the greatest Uneasiness, when I went to visit these Ladies of Honour, with my Nurse, was to see them strip and shift themselves before me, as if I was of no manner of Consequence, which gave me no other Emotions than those of Horror and Disgust. Neither did they scruple to discharge before me what they had drank, to the Quantity of Two Hogsheads at least, in a Vessel that held above Three Tuns. The handsomest among these Maids of Honour, was a frolicksome Girl of Sixteen, who would set me astride upon one of her Nipples, with many other Tricks, which so displeased me, that I entreated *Glumdalclitch* to contrive an Excuse for not seeing that young Lady any more.

One Day a young Gentleman, who was Nephew to my Nurse's Governess, came and pressed them both to see the Execution of a Man who had murdered one of his intimate Acquaintance. *Glumdalclitch*, though averse to such Sights, was prevail'd on to go; and as for my self, although I abhorr'd such Spectacles, my Curiosity tempted me to see something extraordinary. The Malefactor was fixed in a Chair,
upon

upon a Scaffold, and his Head cut off at a Blow, with a Sword about Forty Foot long. The Blood spouted so high from the Veins and Arteries, that the great *Fette d'Eau* at *Versailles* was not equal to it for the Time it lasted.

The Queen, who had often heard me talk of Sea Voyages, asked me, whether I understood how to handle a Sail or an Oar, and whether a little Exercise of Rowing might not be convenient for my Health? I answered, that I understood both very well, but thought it impossible to be done in their Country, where the smallest Boat is as large as a First-Rate Man of War among us, and that such a Boat as I could manage, would not live in their Rivers. Her Majesty said, if I would contrive a Boat, her Joyner should make it. I set him to work, and by my Instructions he finished it in Ten Days. The Queen was so delighted when she saw it, that she ran with it to his Majesty, who ordered me to try it in a Cistern of Water, but here I could not manage my Oars for want of room; but the Queen had ordered the Joyner to make a Trough a Hundred Foot long, Fifty Foot broad, and Eight deep, with a Cock towards the Bottom, to let out the Water

ter when we thought fit. In this I used often to row for my Diversion, and the Entertainment of the Queen, and her Ladies. Sometimes I put up my Sail, and the Ladies afforded me a Gale of Wind with their Fans, or some of the Pages would blow my Sail forward with their Breath, while I shew'd my Art by steering as I pleas'd. In this Exercise I once met an Accident, which had like to have cost me my Life. As *Glumdalclitch's* Governess very officiously lifted me up, to place me in my Boat, I happened to slip between her Fingers, and should have fallen to the Ground if a large Pin, which stuck in her Stomacher, had not luckily catch'd hold of my Cloaths, where I hung till my Nurse ran to my Relief. Another time the Servant, whose Business it was to fill my Trough, happened to let a huge Frog slip out of his Pail into my Boat, which, as I was rowing, leap'd into it, and then over my Head backwards and forwards, making my Face and Cloaths in a dirty Condition with his Slime; till at length I bang'd him about so with my Oars, that he was forced to leap out of the Boat: But the greatest Danger I was ever in, was from a Monkey, who belong'd to the Kitchen. My

G

Nurse

Nurse being gone out upon some Business, had lock'd me up in her Closet, and the Weather being very warm, had left the Window open, as well as the Door and Window of my Box. As I was sitting quietly, I heard something bounce in at the Closet Window, and skip about from one Side to the other. I ventur'd to look, without rising from my Seat, and saw this frolicksome Creature, who seem'd to admire my Box, and peep'd in at the Door, and every Window. I retir'd to the Corner of my Room, but after peeping, and chattering a while, he espied me, and reaching one of his Paws in at the Door, as a Cat does when she plays with a Mouse, he caught hold of the Lappet of my Coat, and dragg'd me out, and held me as a Nurse doth a sucking Child. I had Reason to believe he took me for a young one of his own Species, by his stroaking my Face very gently with his other Paw. He was interrupted in his Diversions by a Noise at the Door, and suddenly jumped to the Window, and thence upon the Leads to the Roof of the House; I heard my Nurse shriek, and that Quarter of the Palace was all in an Uproar. The Monkey was seen by Hundreds of People holding me like an Infant,

fant, and cramming Victuals into my Mouth, which he squeezed out of his Pouch, at which ridiculous Sight every Body laughed but my self. Some threw Stones to drive him down, but this was forbidden, or else, very probably, my Brains had been dash'd out. By this time Ladders were set, and the Servants came up, so that Pug finding himself beset, let me drop upon a Ridge-Tyle, and made his Escape. Here I sat trembling Three Hundred Yards from the Ground, expecting to be blown down, or fall by my own Giddiness, till an honest Lad, one of my Nurse's Footmen, got up to me, and putting me in his Breeches Pocket, brought me down safe. I was almost choak'd with the Monkey's cramming; but my dear little Nurse picked it out of my Mouth with a small Needle, and then I vomited, which gave me great Relief; yet was so bruised by the Squeezing this Animal had given me, that I kept my Bed for a Fortnight. The King and Queen sent every Day to enquire after my Health, and her Majesty made me several Visits while I was ill. The Monkey was kill'd, and an Order given, that none should be kept about the Palace. After my Recovery, I went to return his

G 2

Majesty

Majesty my hearty Thanks for his Favours, who was pleased to banter me, by asking how I liked the Victuals the Monkey gave me, and the Air at the Top of the House? He asked me, What I would have done, in my own Country, upon such an Occasion? I told him we had no Monkeys but what were brought from other Countries, out of Curiosity; but were so small, that I could deal with a Dozen of them if they attack'd me: And as to this, (though he was as big as an Elephant) had I made use of my Hanger when he first put his Paws into my Chamber, perhaps I should have given him such a Wound as would have made him glad to withdraw it with more Hast than he put it in. This I spoke in such a Tone, clapping my Hand upon the Hilt of my Sword at the same Time, that the Company, notwithstanding the Respect due to his Majesty, could not refrain laughing. This made me reflect how vain it is for a Man to attempt doing himself Honour among those who are out of all Degrees of Comparison with him: And yet in *England*, since my Return, I have seen a little contemptible Varlet, without the least Title to Birth, Person, Wit, or common Sense, presume to put himself upon a
Foot

Foot with the greatest Persons of the Kingdom. I furnished the Court every Day with some ridiculous Story or other, and my Nurse, though she was very fond of me, was cunning enough to tell what she thought would be diverting to her Majesty. The Girl, who had been out of Order, was carried out into the Fields, by her Governess, to take the Air; they alighted, and *Glumdalclitch* setting me down, I went out of my Box to walk. I happened to see a Cows-Dung in the Path, as I was walking, and to shew my Activity ran to jump over it, but leaping short, found my self in the Middle, and waded through with some Difficulty; the Footman wiped me clean, and my Nurse confined me to my Box till we went Home. The Queen was soon informed of what had passed, and the whole Mirth at Court, for some Days, was at my Expence.





C H A P. VI.

Several Contrivances of the Author, to please the King and Queen. He shews his Skill in Musick. The King enquires into the State of EUROPE, which the Author relates: With the King's Observations.



AS I went once or twice a Week to his Majesty's Levee, I had seen him shaved, which from the Length of the Razor, was terrible to behold. I once perswaded the Barber to give me some of the Suds, out of which I picked Forty or Fifty Hairs, and shaping a Piece of Wood like the Back of a Comb, I made several Holes in it with a Needle I got from my Nurse, and fixed in the Stumps of Hair so artificially shaping the Points with my Knife, that I made a tolerable Comb; for mine was almost worn out, and there was no Artist in the Country could make me another.

other. This puts me in Mind of an Amusement, wherein I have spent many Hours. I desir'd the Queen's Woman to save the Combings of her Majesty's Hair for me, which, in Time, came to a good Quantity ; I then employed the Cabinet-maker to make me two Chair Frames, no longer than those I had in my Box, and bore, with a fine Awl, round those Parts which I designed for the Backs and Seats, through these Holes I wove some of the strongest Hairs I could pick, in the manner of Cane - Chairs in *England*. I made a Present of these Chairs to her Majesty, who look'd upon them as a great Curiosity. I absolutely refused to sit upon these Chairs when her Majesty desired me, and protested I would rather die than place a dishonourable Part of my Body upon what had been an Ornament to her Head. I likewise made a Purse of about Five Foot long, with some of the same Hairs, with her Majesty's Name in a Gold Cypher ; this I gave to *Glumdalclitch*, by the Queen's Consent, for it was not big enough to bear the large Coin of the Country.

The King being a Lover of Musick, had frequent Consorts at Court, to which I was carried in my Box, but was oblig-

ed to remove as far as I could from the Performers, and then shut the Doors and Windows of it, till I found the Musick not disagreeable. I had learned to play on the Spinnet in my Youth, and my Nurse having a Master to instruct her on that Instrument, a Fancy came into my Head, to divert their Majesties with an *Englisb* Tune; but the Largeness of the Instrument, which was Sixty Foot long, and the Distance of the Keys being a Foot, made it so difficult, that I made use of the following Contrivance: I prepar'd two Sticks, so covered at the End with Mouse-skins, that the Spinnet could not be damaged, or the Sound interrupted, and having a Bench conveniently placed for me, with these two Sticks, I made Shift to play a Jigg to the Satisfaction of their Majesties; but never underwent a harder Exercise in my Life.

The King, who, as I observed before, was a Prince of admirable Understanding, frequently ordered that I should be brought to him in his Closet, where I have had several Conversations with him; and one Day I took the Freedom to tell his Majesty, that his Contempt of *Europe*, and the rest of the World, did not seem answerable to those excellent Qualities of the

the Mind he was Master of. That the Extent of Reason was not proportion'd to that of the Body ; and that in our Country we observ'd it to be contrary. That among other Animals, Bees and Ants are allowed to have more Industry and Sagacity than larger Animals ; and that as inconsiderable as he took me to be, I hoped to live to be of signal Service to his Majesty. The King heard me with Attention, and began to conceive a better Opinion of me, than he had before, and desired I would give him as exact an Account of the Government of *England* as I possibly could. Imagine then, Courteous Reader, how often I wish'd for the Tongue of *Demosthenes* or *Cicero*, to utter the Praise of my own dear Country, in a Style suitable to its Merits and Felicity. I began my Discourse, by informing his Majesty, that our Dominions consisted of two Islands, which compos'd three mighty Kingdoms, under one Sovereign, besides our Plantations in *America*, and dwelt long upon the Fertility of the Soil, and Temperature of the Climate. I then spoke of the Constitution of the Parliament, partly compos'd of an illustrious Body, call'd the House of Peers, who were of the most noble and ancient Families in the Kingdom. I de-

scribed the Care always taken in their Education, to qualify them to be Members of the highest Court of Judicature, and Champions, for the Defence of their Prince and Country. That these were the Ornaments and Bulwark of the Kingdom, worthy Followers of their renowned Ancestors, whose Honour had been the Reward of their Virtues, from which their Posterity were never known to degenerate. To these were joined several holy Persons, chose among those of the Priesthood, who are distinguish'd by the Sanctity of their Lives, and profound Erudition, whose Business is to take Care of Religion, and be the spiritual Fathers of Clergy and People. That the other Part of the Parliament consisted of an Assembly, called, The House of Commons, who were all principal Gentlemen, freely elected, by the People themselves, for their great Abilities and Love of their Country, to represent the Wisdom of the whole Nation. And that to these Two Bodies, in Conjunction with the Prince, the whole Legislature is committed. I then descended to the Courts of Judicature, where the Interpreters of the Laws sit to determine the Rights and Properties of Men, as well for the Punishment of Vice, as Protection of Innocence.

nocence. I mentioned the prudent Management of our Treasury, and Power of our Arms, by Sea and Land. I computed the Number of People, by reckoning that of each Sect in Religion, and Party in Politicks. I omitted nothing that might redound to the Honour of my Country ; and finished, by giving the History of *England*, for One Hundred Years past. I had five Audiences of the King before this Conversation was finish'd, who took Notes of what I had said, and Memorandums of what Questions he intended to ask me. When these Discourses were ended, his Majesty, in a Sixth Audience, proposed many Queries upon each Article. He asked first, What Methods were taken to cultivate the Minds and Bodies of our young Nobility, and in what Manner they spent the first Part of their Lives ? How that Assembly was supply'd when a Family was extinct ? And what Qualifications were necessary in those promoted to the Peerage ? Whether the Humour of the Prince, or a Sum of Money rightly apply'd, or the Design of Strengthening a Party opposite to the Publick Interest, were ever Motives of Advancement ? Whether these Lords were sufficiently Knowing in the Laws, to enable them to decide

decide the Properties of their Fellow-Subjects? Whether Partiality and Bribes had no Place among them? And whether those holy Lords were always promoted for their Knowledge in Religion, and Sanctity of their Lives? And lastly, whether, when they were only Priests, they had not been Compliers with the Times, and prostitute Chaplains to some Noblemen, whose Opinions they meanly follow'd when they were admitted into that Assembly? He then asked me, Whether any Arts were practis'd in the Election of the Commoners? Whether a Stranger, with a long Purse, could not be elected before a worthy Gentleman of the Neighbourhood? How it happened that Gentlemen, at a great Expence, were resolutely bent to get into this Assembly, which is only a Trouble, without any Pension or Salary? Because this appeared so exalted a Strain of Publick Spirit, that his Majesty doubted its Sincerity, and desired to know, whether these zealous Gentlemen had no ways of refunding themselves, by sacrificing the Publick Good to the Designs of a vicious Prince, and corrupt Ministry? He multiplied his Objections and Enquiries to that Degree, that I think it not prudent to repeat them. His Majesty

Majesty desired to be satisfy'd in relation to our Courts of Justice, in which I was the better able to satisfy him, having been formerly almost ruined by a Suit in *Chancery*, which was decreed for me with Costs. He asked, What Time was spent in the Determination of these Suits, and what was the Degree of Expence? Whether Advocates had the Privilege of pleading in Causes known to be unjust and oppressive? Whether Party, in Religion and Politicks, was observed to be of any Weight in the Scale of Justice? Whether those concerned in the Pleadings were educated in the general Knowledge of Equity, or only in Provincial, National, or other Local Customs? Whether they, or the Judges, had any Share in the making those Laws they have the Liberty of interpreting and glossing upon at their Pleasure? Whether they had ever pleaded for and against the same Cause, and cited Precedents to prove contrary Opinions? Whether they were rich or poor, or received a pecuniary Reward for their Opinions, and particularly whether they were admitted as Members of the Senate? He came next to the Management of our Treasury, and said, He thought I was mistaken in computing our Taxes at about

Five

Five or Six Millions; but when I mentioned the Issues, he found they were sometimes double; for as he had taken particular Notes, hoping that the Knowledge of our Conduct might be useful to him; he could not be deceived in his Calculations. He thought it strange, if what I told him was true, how a Kingdom could run out of its Estate, like a private Person; and asked me, Who gave us Credit? And how we proposed to pay them? He wondered to hear me talk of long and expensive Wars, adding, that we must live in a bad Neighbourhood, or be a quarrelsome People, and that our Generals must needs be richer than our Kings. He asked me, What Business we had from our own Islands, unless it was upon Trade, some Treaty, or the Defence of our Coasts? Above all, he was surprized to hear me talk of a standing Army in Time of Peace, and among a free People. He said, if we were governed by our Consent, in the Persons of our Representatives, he could not see any Room for Fear; and left it to my Opinion, whether a private Man's House could not be better defended by himself and Family, than by picking up Knaves in the Streets for small Wages, who would get an Hundred

dred Times more by cutting their Throats. He laughed at my calculating the Number of People, by a Computation drawn from the different Sects in Religion and Politics, and said, he knew no Reasons why those, who entertain'd Opinions contrary to the Interest of the Publick, should be obliged to change, or should not be obliged to conceal them, and as it was Tyranny to require the First, so it was Weakness not to enforce the Latter, lest they should spread those Poisons under the Name of Cordials. He observed that Gaming was a Diversion among the Nobility, and desired to know at what Age they began it, and whether it ever affected their Fortunes? And whether mean vicious People did not, by their Dexterity, fleece the Nobility, and force them, by the Losses they have sustained, to practise the same infamous Arts upon others? He was amazed at the History I had given him of our last Century, and said it was only a Heap of Conspiracies, Rebelions, Murders, Massacres, Revolutions, and Banishments; the very worst Effects, the worst Vices could produce. His Majesty, in another Audience, took the Trouble to recapitulate what I had told him, and taking me by the Hand, delivered

vered himself in the following Manner ; My little Friend *Grildrig*, you have made a most admirable Panegyrick on your own Country. You have prov'd that Ignorance, Sloth, and Vice, may be the only Ingredients in qualifying a Legislator ; that Laws are best explain'd by those who have Abilities to confound and elude them. I observe among you some Lines of an Institution originally tolerable ; but half erased and blotted out by Corruptions. It does not appear, by all you have said, that any one Virtue is required to the Advancement of any one to a high Station, much less that Priests are advanc'd for their Piety, Soldiers for their Valour, or Judges for their Integrity, Senators for the Love of their Country, or Counsellors for their Wisdom. As for your own Part, (continued the King) who have spent your Time in travelling, I hope you have escaped the Vices of your Country ; but from what I have observed in your whole Relation, I must conclude the Bulk of your Natives, to be the most pernicious Race that Nature ever suffered to live upon the Face of the Earth.



C H A P. VII.

The Author's Love of his Country. He makes a Proposal of much Advantage to the King, which is rejected. The King's great Ignorance in Politicks. The Learning of that Country very imperfect and confin'd. Their Laws. Military Affairs. And Parties in State.



Nothing but an extreme Love of Truth could have hindered me from concealing this Part of my Story. My Resentments were ridicul'd, and I was forced to be patient while my Country was so injuriously treated. I am heartily sorry, as any of my Readers can be, that such an Occasion was given ; but the Curiosity of this Prince made him so particular in his Enquiries, that in Gratitude and good Manners I was obliged to satisfy him as well as I could: Yet this I may say, in my own Vindica-

Vindication, that I artfully eluded many of his Questions, and gave a more favourable Turn than the Strictness of Truth would admit: For I always bore that Partiality to my Country which *Dionysius Halicarnassensis* recommends to an Historian, willing to hide the Frailties of it, and place its Virtues in the strongest Light. This must be said in favour of that Prince, that, as he lived secluded from the rest of the World, he could not be acquainted with the Manners and Customs of other Nations; and it would be hard, indeed, if so remote a Prince's Notion should be offered as a Standard for all Mankind. To confirm the miserable Effects of a confin'd Education, I shall here insert a Passage which will hardly obtain Belief. In Hopes of ingratiating my self with his Majesty, I told him of an Invention to make a certain Powder, one Grain of which, being set on Fire, would kindle the Whole, though as big as a Mountain, and make it fly up into the Air, with a Noise like Thunder. I then took notice of the vast Force this Power had when put into a hollow Tube of Brass or Iron, in throwing a Ball of Iron or Lead with that Violence, that nothing could withstand it. That I knew
the

the Ingredients very well, which were cheap and common, and understood the Manner of compounding them, and could direct his Workmen how to make those Tubes of a Size, proportion'd to all other Things in his Majesty's Dominions; Twenty or Thirty whereof would batter down the strongest Walls in his Majesty's Dominions. This I offer'd as an Acknowledgment in Return of so many Marks of Favour and Protection received from his Majesty. The King was struck with Horror at the Description and Proposal, and was amazed that so grovelling an Insect as I (these were his Expressions) could entertain such inhuman Ideas, and seem unconcerned at the Thoughts of so much Blood and Desolation; and that it must be some Enemy to Mankind who was the first Contriver of those Machines; and that, as to his own Part, he would sooner lose half his Kingdom, than be privy to a such Secret which he commanded me, as I valued my Life, never to mention any more. A Strange Effect of narrow Principles and short Views! that a Prince possessed of so many good Qualities, and admirable Talents for Government, and almost adored by his People, should, from a nice unnecessary
) Scruple,

Scruple, whereof in *Europe* we have no Conception, let slip an Opportunity of making himself Master of the Lives, Liberties, and Fortunes of his People. Neither do I say this with the least Intention to detract from the many Virtues of so excellent a King; but take it as a Defect among them from their Ignorance in Politics: For I remember, in a Discourse I had with the King, when I happened to mention several Thousand Books among us written upon the Art of Government, it gave him a mean Opinion of our Understandings. He professed both to abominate and despise all Mystery, Refinement, and Intrigue in Prince or Minister: That he did not understand what we meant by Secrets of State; that the Knowledge of Governing being founded upon common Sense and Reason, whoever could make two Ears of Corn grow where only one grew before, would deserve better of Mankind, and do more Service to his Country, than the whole Race of Politicians together. The Learning of this People is very defective, consisting only in Morality, History, Poetry, and Mathematicks, wherein they must be allow'd to excel: But the last of these is wholly applied to what may be useful in Life; so that
among

among us it would be little esteem'd ;
 and as to Metaphysicks, I could never
 make them in the least conceive. No
 Law of that Country must exceed in
 Words, the Number of Letters in their
 Alphabet, which consists only of Two
 and Twenty. They are written in the
 most easy Terms, wherein those People
 cannot discover above one Interpretation,
 and it is a Capital Crime to comment
 upon any Law. They have had the
 Art of Printing, as well as the *Chinese*,
 Time out of Mind ; but their Libra-
 ries are not very large : The King's,
 which is the biggest, has a Thousand
 Volumes, placed in a Gallery Twelve
 Hundred Foot long. As I had the Li-
 berty of borrowing what Books I pleas'd,
 the Queen's Joyner contriv'd me a Ma-
 chine, like a moveable Pair of Stairs, by
 mounting and descending of which, I
 made shift to read some of the largest
 Folio's. Their Stile is Clear, Masculine,
 and Smooth, but not Florid, for they
 avoid multiplying unnecessary Words, or
 using various Expressions. I have pe-
 rused several of them, and among the
 rest, was much diverted with one which
 belongs to my Nurse's Governess. This
 treats

treats of the Weakness of Human-Kind, and is little esteemed, except among the Women, and the Vulgar. The Author goes through the usual Topicks of *European* Moralists, shewing how diminutive and helpless a Creature Man is, incapable of defending himself from the Inclemencies of the Air, or the Fury of wild Beasts: And added, That in those latter Ages, the Race of Mankind was not to be compared to that of ancient Times, which was much larger; that the Truth of this did not only appear from History and Tradition, but confirmed by huge Bones and Skulls casually dug in several Parts of the Kingdom. He argued, That the very Laws of Nature requir'd that we should have been made more robust in the Beginning, and not so liable to Destruction from every little Accident. From this Way of Reasoning, the Author drew several moral Applications, which are needless to repeat. As to their Military Affairs, they boast that the King's Army consists of a Hundred and Seventy Six Thousand Foot, and Thirty Two Thousand Horse; if that may be call'd an Army which is made up of Tradesmen and Farmers, whose Nobility and Gentry command them, without Pay or Reward.

ward. Their Exercise and Discipline was perfect enough, considering that every Farmer is under the Command of his Landlord, and every Citizen under that of the principal Men in his own City, chosen by Ballot, after the Manner of *Venice*. I have often seen the Militia of *Lorbrulgrud* exercise in a great Field near the City. They were not in all above Twenty-Five Thousand Foot, and Six Thousand Horse. A Cavalier, mounted on a large Steed, gave the Word of Command, upon which they drew their Swords, and brandish'd them in the Air. Imagination can figure nothing so grand or surprizing : It look'd as if Ten Thousand Flashes of Lightning were darting at the same Time from every Quarter of the Sky. I was curious to know how this Prince came to think of Armies, into whose Dominions there is no Access from any other Country : But was soon inform'd by reading their Histories, that, for many Ages, they have been troubled with the same Disease, common to many other Governments ; the Nobility often contending for Power, the People for Liberty, and the King for absolute Dominion ; which had once, or more, occasion'd

sion'd civil Wars, the last of which was happily put an End to by this Prince's Grandfather by a general Composition, and the Militia, then settled by common Consent, hath ever since been kept in the strictest Duty.





C H A P. VIII.

The King and Queen make a Progress to the Frontiers. The Author attends them. The Manner in which he leaves the Country, particularly related. He returns to England.



Had always a strong Impulse that I should one Day recover my Liberty, but by what Means, or how to contrive it, was impossible. The Ship in which I sailed was the first ever driven within Sight of that Coast, and the King had given Orders if another appear'd, it should be brought to the Metropolis, with all its Crew. He was strongly bent to get me a Woman of my own Size, by whom I might propagate the Breed : But, I think, I should rather have died than undergone the Disgrace of leaving a Posterity to be kept in Cages, and sold to the Nobility for Curiosities. I cannot say but I was kindly
H treated

treated, though not upon a Foot becoming the Dignity of Human Kind. I wanted to be among those I could freely converse with, and walk about the Streets without Fear of being trod upon like a young Puppy. But my Deliverance came sooner than I expected, the Circumstances whereof I shall faithfully relate. I had been Two Years in this Country, and about the Beginning of the Third, my Nurse and I attended the King and Queen in a Progress to the South Coast of the Kingdom. I was carried in my travelling Box as usual, and had ordered a Hammock to be fixed in it to prevent my being jolted when a Servant carried me on Horseback. On the Roof of my Closet, not directly over the Middle of my Hammock, I order'd the Joyner to cut a Hole, of a Foot square, to let in Air, while I slept in hot Weather; which Hole I could open and shut at Pleasure. When we came to our Journey's End, the King had a Mind to pass a few Days at a Palace he hath, not many Miles from the Sea-side. *Glumdalclitch* and I were much fatigu'd, but the Poor Girl was oblig'd to keep her Chamber. I pretended to be worse than I was, from an Inclination I had to see the Ocean, which I knew must be

be the Scene of my Escape, happen when it would ; and desired leave to take the Air of the Sea, with a Page who had sometimes been entrusted with me. *Glum-dalclitch* parted from me, as if what was to happen had been foretold. The Boy took me in my Box to the Sea-shore, where I order'd him to set it down, and lifting up one of my Sashes, cast many a wishful melancholy Eye to the Sea. I told the Boy I was not very well, and would therefore try to take a Nap in my Hammock. I soon fell asleep, and the Page, who imagin'd no Danger could happen, went to look for Birds Eggs in the Clefts of the Rocks ; this I conjecture, having seen him, from my Window, pick up one or two before. I found my self awak'd on a sudden, by a violent Pull upon the Ring fastned to the Top of the Box, which had almost toss'd me out of my Hammock. I perceiv'd my Box rais'd into the Air, and moving with an easy though a swift Motion. I called out several times, but to no purpose : I look'd towards my Windows, but could see nothing but Sky and Clouds. I heard a Noise like the flapping of Wings over my Head, which made me certain that some Eagle had got the Ring of my

Box in his Beak, and would let it fall upon a Rock, like a Tortoise, and pick out my Body to devour it. In a little time the Noise and Flutter of Wings increased, and I found my self tossed up and down, till on a sudden I fell perpendicularly down for the Space of a Minute, with that incredible Velocity, that I almost lost my Breath. My Fall was stopp'd by a terrible Squash, which sounded louder to me than the Cataract of *Niagara*; after which, I was in the Dark for another Minute, and then could see Light through the Tops of my Windows. I perceived now that I was fallen into the Sea, and that my Box floated Five Foot deep in Water. The Plates of Iron, fastened to the Bottom of it, preserved it from breaking on the Surface of the Water. Every Joint was well grooved, and the Door moving up and down, like a Sash, was so tight, that very little Water came in. I got out of my Hammock with much Difficulty, having first opened the Hole at the Top of my Box to let in Air, for want of which I found my self almost stifled. Although, in the midst of these Misfortunes, I could not forbear reflecting on the Condition of my poor *Glumdalclitch*,
whose

whose Ruin must consequently happen from this Accident. Many Travellers have not been in greater Distress than I was at this Time, under Apprehensions of seeing my Box dash'd to Pieces, or over-set; even the Breach of one single Pane of Glass would have been immediate Death; nor could any thing have preserv'd my Windows but the Iron Wire, which was placed on the Outside to prevent Accidents in Travelling. I was four Hours, thus expecting every Moment would be my last. The Reader, in a former Description of this Box, may remember there were two strong Staples fixed to the Side which had no Window, into which a Servant put a Leathern Belt, and buckled it about his Waist when he carried me on Horseback; I heard a Noise on that Side, and began to fancy my Box pulled, or towed, along in the Sea: This gave me some faint Hopes, and I ventur'd to unscrew one of my Chairs, which was fastened to the Floor, by which means I got up to the Hole at the Top, and called out for Help in every Language I understood; and fastening my Handkerchief to a Stick, I thrust it through the Hole, and waved it in the Air, that if any Ship or Boat

was near, they might come to my Relief. I found no Effect from what I had done, but, in about the Space of an Hour, that Part of the Box where the Staples were fix'd, struck against something that was hard, which I apprehended to be a Rock: At Length I heard a Noise, at the Top of my Closet, like the grating of a Cable passing through the Ring, and found my self hoisted up, whereupon I thrust up my Stick and Handkerchief, calling for Help, till I was almost hoarse; in Return to which I heard a great Shout, which gave me inexpressible Joy. I now heard a trampling over my Head, and somebody calling, through the Hole, -in the *English* Tongue; *If there be any Body below, let them speak.* I answered, I was an *Englishman*, drawn by ill Fortune into the greatest Calamity ever Mortal underwent, and desired to be deliver'd out of the Dungeon I was in. The Voice replied, I was safe, and that the Carpenter should saw a Hole in the Cover large enough to take me out. I, not thinking I had got among People of my own Stature and Strength, answer'd, That one of them might put his Finger in the Ring, and take the Box out of the Sea, and so into the Captain's Cabbin. Some
of

of them hearing me talk so wildly, thought I was mad, and others laughed. The Carpenter soon came and made a Hole, through which I was taken into the Ship, in a very weak Condition. The Sailors amaz'd, ask'd me a Thousand Questions, and I was equally confounded at the Sight of so many Pigmies, for so they appear'd to me after the monstrous Objects I had so lately seen : But the Captain, *Mr. Thomas Wilcox*, an honest *Shropshire-Man*, observing I was ready to faint, took me into his Closet, and gave me a Cordial to comfort me, and advised me to take a little Rest upon it. Before I went to sleep, I told him the Furniture of my Box was too good to be lost, and if he would let one of the Crew bring it into his Cabbin,

I would shew him the Goods. The Captain thought I was raving by my Discourse ; however, to pacify me, he promis'd it should be done, and, going upon Deck, order'd some of the Men to go down into my Closet, which they stript, but not without Damage to the Bedsted, Chairs, and Cabinet, which were screw'd to the Floor, and let the Hulk sink into the Sea. I am glad I was not a Spectator of the Havock they made, being confi-

dent it would have brought some Passages to my Mind, which I was willing to forget. I slept some Hours, and found myself much refreshed when I awaked. The Captain thinking I had fasted too long, order'd Supper, and entertain'd me very kindly. When we were alone, he desir'd a Relation of my Travels, and by what Accident I came adrift in that monstrous wooden Chest. He said, when he first spied it, he thought it a Sail, which he had a Mind to make, in hopes of buying some Biscuit, his own beginning to fall short: That coming nearer, he found his Error, and order'd his Long-boat out to discover what I was, and his Men came back in a Fright, swearing they had seen a swimming House. He laughed at them, and went into the

... the boat himself, ordering his Men to take some Cables with them. That rowing round me he discover'd the two Staples, and order'd his Men to fasten a Cable to one of them, and tow my Chest (as he called it) to the Ship. When it was there, he order'd them to raise it up with Pullies, which all the Sailors were not able to do above two or three Foot.

He said they saw my Stick and Handkerchief, and concluded some unhappy Man must be shut up in that Cavity. I enquired, whether any of his Crew had observed any prodigious Birds in the Air, about the Time they discovered me? He told me, one of his Men said he had seen Three Eagles, flying towards the North, but were so high, that they did not seem extraordinary large. I then asked the Captain, How far he reckoned we might be from Land? He said, by the best Computation he could make, we were, at least, a Hundred Leagues. I assured him, he was mistaken, for I had not left the Country I came from above Two Hours, before I dropp'd into the Sea. He again thought me distracted, and advised me to go to rest. I assured him, I was as much in my Senses, as ever I was in my Life; upon which, he seriously asked me, Whether my being exposed in that Chest, was not designed as a Punishment for some Crime I had committed? for although he should be sorry to have taken such a Man into his Ship, he promised to set me safe on Shore at the first Port. He added, his Suspicions were increased by my absurd Speeches to the Sailors, as well as by my Looks and Behaviour

haviour at Supper. I begg'd his Patience to hear my Story, which I related faithfully, from the Moment I left *England*, to his first discovering me; and as Truth soon prevails on rational Minds, he was soon convinc'd of my Candour and Veracity; but to confirm what I said, I opened my Cabinet, and shew'd him some Rarities I had collected in the Country from whence I came. There was the Comb, which I had made of the Stumps of the King's Beard, and another of the same Materials, but fixed into the Parings of her Majesty's Thumb-Nail, which served for the Back. A Collection of Pins and Needles, from a Foot to half a Yard long; Four Wasps Stings, like Joyners Tacks; some Combings of the Queen's Hair; a Gold Ring, which the Queen took off her little Finger, and put it over my Head, like a Collar. I offer'd to make him a Present of the Ring, but he absolutely refused it. I shew'd him a Corn I cut from a Maid of Honour's Toe, as big as a *Kentish* Pippin, which I afterwards made into a Cup, and set in Silver. I could persuade him to accept of nothing among my Curiosities, but a Footman's Tooth, which he received with abundance of Thanks. It was drawn by an unskil-

ful

ful Surgeon from one of my Nurse's Footmen, but was as sound as any in his Head. This I kept as a Rarity, it being about a Foot long, and Four Inches in diameter. The Captain was very well satisfied with this plain Relation, and said, he hop'd I would oblige the World with it, by making it Publick. I answered him, That I thought there was too great a Number of Books on Travels; that nothing passed but what was extraordinary, wherein I doubted, some Authors less consulted Truth, than the Interest or Diversion of ignorant Readers. That my History could contain nothing more than common Events, except the strange Products of the Country, and Customs of the People, with which most Writers abound. However, I thanked him for his good Opinion, and promised to think of his Proposal. Observing that I spoke very loud, he asked me, Whether the King and Queen of that Country were thick of Hearing? I told him, The Height of the People, among whom I had been for above Two Years past, occasion'd my speaking so loud; and that I admired as much at the Voices of him and his Men, who seem'd to me only to whisper, and yet I could hear them well enough. I told him, that
I

I likewise observ'd, when I first entered the Ship, his Sailors appeared to me the most minute, contemptible Creatures, I had ever beheld ; for indeed, while I was in that Prince's Country, I could not endure to look in a Glass, because the Comparison between the Inhabitants and my self, gave me a despicable Conceit of my Stature. The Captain said, he observ'd, that while we were at Supper, I seem'd amazed at every thing, and could hardly forbear Laughter, which he knew not well how to take, but imputed it to some Disorder in my Brain. I answered it was very true, and that well I might, when his Dishes seem'd to me of the Size of a Silver Three-pence, a Leg of Pork, but a Mouthful, and a Cup not so big as a Nut-shell ; and so I went on describing the rest of his Household-Stuff, and Provisions after the same Manner. For although the Queen had furnished me with a little Equipage of all Things necessary, my Ideas were wholly employ'd in what I saw about me, and I winked at my own Littleness, as People do at their own Faults. The Captain understanding my Raillery, reply'd, with the old *English* Proverb, That he doubted my Eyes were bigger than my Belly ; for he did not observe my

my Stomach extraordinary, though I had fasted all Day. And continuing his Mirth, now'd, he would have given an Hundred Pounds to have seen my Closet in the Eagle's Beak, and its Fall into the Sea, which would have been an Object worthy of having the Description of it transmitted to Posterity : And the Comparison of *Phaeton* was so obvious, that he could not forbear applying it, although I did not much admire the Conceit. The Captain having been at *Tonquin*, was, in his Return Home, driven North-Eastward to the Latitude of 44° , and of Longitude 143. But meeting a Trade-wind, we sailed Southward a long Time, and coasting *New Holland*, kept our Course West-South-West, and then South-South-West, till we doubled the *Cape of Good Hope*. We had a prosperous Voyage, but I shall not trouble the Reader with a Journal of it. The Captain called in at one or two Ports, and took in Provisions and fresh Water. But never left the Ship, till we arriv'd in the *Towns*, which was on the 3d of *June*, 1706. being Nine Months after my Escape. I offered to leave my Goods in Security for Payment of my Freight ; but he refused to take any thing. We took Leave of each other, and I made him

him promise he would come to see me at my House. I took Horse for *London*, and as I was on the Road, observing the Liteness of the Trees, Cattle and People, began to think I was at *Lilliput*; and being afraid of trampling on every Traveler I met, had like to have had my Head broke, for calling aloud to them to stand out of the way. When I came to my own House, one of the Servants opening the Door, I stooped to go in (like a Goose under a Gate) for fear of striking my Head. My Wife ran out to embrace me, but I stoop'd lower than her Knees, thinking she could not otherwise reach my Mouth. My Daughter kneeled to ask Blessing, but I could not see her till she rose, having been used to Objects above Sixty Foot high, and look'd down upon every Body in the House, as if they had been Pigmies, and I a Giant. I told my Wife she had been too thrifty, for I found she had starved herself and her Daughter. In short, I behav'd my self in such a Manner, that they concluded I had lost my Senses. This I mention as an Instance of the great Power of Habit and Prejudice. In a little Time my Family and I came to a right Understanding, and my Wife protested I should go to Sea no more;

to BROBDINGNAG. 159

more ; but my evil Fate so ordered it, that she had no Power to prevent it, as the Reader may know hereafter. In the mean Time, I here conclude the Second Part of my unfortunate Voyages.

The END of the SECOND PART.



THE
OFFICE OF THE
SHERIFF OF THE COUNTY OF
KANE

REV. J. H. KELLEY

Wm. R. T. KELLEY

DEPT. OF JUSTICE

WASHINGTON, D. C.

RECEIVED

NOV 10 1891

NOV 10 1891

NOV 10 1891

NOV 10 1891

NOV 10 1891

NOV 10 1891

NOV 10 1891

NOV 10 1891

NOV 10 1891

NOV 10 1891

The
by
m
ce



He co



TRAVELS.

PART III.

A Voyage to LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI, LUGGNAGG, GLUBB-DUBDRIB, and JAPAN.

CHAP. I.

The Author undertakes a third Voyage ; is taken by the Pirates. The Malice of a Dutchman. His Arrival at an Island. He is received into Laputa.



Had not been long at home before Captain *Robinson*, Commander of the *Hopewell*, a Ship of three hundred Ton, came to make me a Visit. He complimented me on my Arrival, asking

B ing

ing, whether I was resolved to settle for Life? Adding, that he intended a Voyage to the *East-Indies* in two Months. He invited me at last, not without some Apology, to be Surgeon to his Ship, with uncommon Advantages; that, knowing my Experience in Sea Affairs, he would follow my Advice, as if I had a Share in the Command. I was so thoroughly acquainted with the Honesty of the Man, that I could not reject his Proposals. Nothing was wanting but my Wife's Consent, which I obtained by the Prospect of the Advantage it might be to her Children. We sailed the 5th Day of *August* 1706, and arriv'd at Fort St. George the 11th of *April* 1707, and refresh'd our Crew, many of whom were sick. Thence we went to *Tonquin*, where the Captain was resolved to stay till the Goods were ready that he was to take on Board, which could not be in some Months. To defray his Expenses, during his Stay, he bought a Sloop loaded with Goods, in which the *Tonquin* trade to the neighbouring Islands; and putting fourteen Men on Board, appointed me Master, with Power to traffick while he transacted his Affairs. After three Days Sail a Storm, arising, drove us for five Days, North North East, and the

then East, when we had better Weather. The tenth Day we were chased by two Pirates, who overtook and boarded us, our Sloop being deep laden; and finding us on our Faces, for so I gave Order, they pinioned us and set a Guard, while they searched the Sloop. There was among them a *Dutchman*, of some Authority, though not the Commander of the Ship, who, knowing us to be *Englishmen*, swore we should be tied Back to Back, and cast overboard. I answered him in *Dutch*, which I spoke pretty well, telling him who we were, and begging him, that as we were of the same Religion, Neighbours, and in strict Alliance, he would prevail on the Captains to treat us with Compassion: But this only inflamed his Rage, for he spoke with Indignation in the *Japanese* Language, often using the Word *Christianos*. One of the Pirate Ships was under the Command of a *Japanese* Captain, who, after some Discourse with me, in broken *Dutch*, said we should not die. Having saluted him, turning to the *Dutchman*, I said, I was sorry to find more Pity from a Heathen than a Christian: But this malicious Reprobate gave me Cause to repent those rash Words; for, though he

could not persuade the Captains, in Breach of their Promise, to take away my Life, he, notwithstanding, moved them to inflict on me a severer Punishment. My Men were sent into the Pirate Ships; and, as to my self, it was agreed on, that I should be set a-drift in a small Canoe, with only four Days Provisions, which the Captain was pleased to double, not permitting any Man to search me. Having got down into the Canoe, the *Dutchman*, being on Deck, loaded me with Imprecations. A little before we saw the Pirates, I had observed that we were in the Latitude of 46 N. and of Longitude 183, and, being at some Distance from them, by my Pocket-Perspective, I discover'd several Islands to the South-East, the nearest of which I reach'd in about three Hours Sail. On this Island, though rocky, I got Birds-Eggs, and kindled some Heath and dry Sea-Weed, to roast them, eating no other Supper, that I might spare my Provisions; and, strowing some Heath under me, I slept pretty well under the Shelter of a Rock. The next Day I arrived at another Island, and thence sailed to others, until at length I reached the last in my View, which lay
South

South South East of the former, though not in less than five Hours. I found, after sailing almost round it, a small Creek to land in, and observed the Island to be all rocky, only that here and there were Tufts of Grass and Sweet-Herbs. Having refresh'd my self, I secur'd the Remainder of my Provisions in a Cave, and gathered many Eggs, with some Sea-Weed and parched Grass, to roast them the next Day, for I was furnished with a Flint, Steel, Match, and Burning-Glass, to kindle a Fire. I spent the Night in a Cave, and made my Bed with Grass and Sea-Weed, but slept very little ; for though I was weary, the Disquiets of my Mind kept me awake. I reflected on the miserable Condition I was in ; and think it desperate, I had not the Heart to rise before the Day was far advanced. Walking among the Rocks, the Sky being very clear, and the Sun so hot that I was obliged to turn my Back to it, I observed it became obscured, though, methought, in a very odd and extraordinary Manner. I perceived a vast dark Body between me and the Sun, that moved towards the Island, which appear'd to be two Miles high, and obscured the Sun several Mi-

minutes; but the Air was not much colder, nor the Sky more darken'd, than if I had been under the Shade of a Mountain. Approaching nearer to me, it seem'd to be a solid Substance, the Bottom flat, smooth, and very bright, from the Reflexion of the Sea. About two hundred Yards from the Shore, I stood upon a Height, and saw this great Body descending almost to a Parallel with me, at less than a Mile's Distance. By my Pocket-Glass, I plainly discovered many People moving on the Sides of it; but, what they were doing, I could not discern. The Love of Life gave me some Motions of Joy, and I was inclined to hope, that this Adventure might help to deliver me from my desolate Condition: But, at the same Time, I was inconceivably astonish'd to view an Island in the Air, inhabited by Men, who could (as it seem'd) make it rise or fall, or put it in progressive Motion, at their Pleasure. Being then not disposed to examine into the Nature of this *Phænomenon*, I chose to observe which Way it would move, for it seem'd for a while to stand still. When it advanced nearer, I beheld its Sides, furrounded with Gradations of Galleries and Stairs, at certain Intervals,
descend-

descending from one to the other. In the lowest of these I saw People fishing, and others looking on. Waving my Cap and Handkerchief towards the Island, and, upon its nearer Approach, calling to them as loudly as I could ; I observed a Croud gather to that Side which faced me, and found, by their Behaviour, that they saw me, though they made no Answer to my Shouting ; for four or five Men ran hastily up to the Top of the Island, to receive Orders from some Person in Authority on this Occasion. The Crowd increasing, in less than half an Hour the lowest Gallery appeared in a Parallel of less than an hundred Yards Distance from me ; and I address'd them in the most suppliant Manner, but received no Answer. Those who were next me seemed, by their Dress, to be Men of Distinction, who, conferring together earnestly, gaz'd often upon me. At last one of them called out to me in a beautiful Dialect, in Sound like the *Italian* ; and I answered him in that Language, hoping, at least, that the Cadence would be more pleasing to his Ears. My Meaning was easily guessed at, though we did not understand each

B 4

other ;

other; for the People saw my Distress, and made Signs for me to go towards the Shoar, which I did. The Island being raised to a proper Heighth, the Verge directly over me, they let down a Chain, with a Seat fixed to the Bottom, in which they drew me up by Pullies.





CHAP. II.

*The Humours of the Laputians described.
An Account of their Learning. Of the
King and his Court. The Author's Recep-
tion there. The Inhabitants liable to Fears
and Perturbations. An Account of the
Women.*

AS soon as I alight, many People flock'd about me, some of whom seem'd to be of better Quality. They beheld me with Astonishment, as I did them, because I had never before seen any Persons so singular in their Shapes, Dresses, and Complexions; having their Heads all reclined, one of their Eyes inward, and the other directly to the Zenith, and their upper Garments adorn'd with the Figures of Suns, Moons, and Stars, interwoven with those of many musical Instruments, some of which are unknown to us *Europeans*. Several among the Crowd were cloath'd like Servants,

with a blown Bladder, fix'd like a Flail to the End of a short Stick, which they had in their Hands, in each of which Bladders were a few dried Pease or small Pebbles. I observ'd them to flap the Mouths and Ears of one another with these Bladders, which at first, I thought to be an unaccountable Practice: But I soon learned, that their Minds are so intently fixed on speculative Subjects, that they can neither speak themselves, nor hear others, unless rouzed by an outward Touch on the Mouth and Ears. On this Account, they usually keep a *Flapper* in their Families (in the Original *Climenole*) whose Office it is, in Company, gently to strike the Mouth of the Speaker, and right Ear of the Hearer; and attend his Master also in his Walks, now and then flapping him on the Eyes, lest, being wrapp'd in Thought, he should fall down a Precipice, hit his Head against a Post, or, in the Streets, jostle others, or be jostled himself into the Kennel. By what has been said, the Reader may understand the Proceedings of those People, as they conducted me to the Top of the Island, and thence to the King's Palace; for, in our Way thither, they often forgot what they were doing, leaving me to my self, neither

neither the Sight of my strange Habit and Countenance, nor the Shouts of the unthinking Vulgar, being able to move them, until they were roused by their *Flappers*. At length, arriving at the Palace, I enter'd into the Presence-Chamber, and beheld the King on his Throne, attended by Persons of the prime Nobility. Near the Throne was a large Table full of Globes and all Sorts of mathematical Instruments; but, notwithstanding the Noise of our Entrance, and the Hurry of the Court, His Majesty took no Notice of us; for being intent on a Problem, we waited an Hour, before he had solved it. As soon as the King was at Leisure, two young Pages, standing by him with Flaps in their Hands, gently struck him, the one his Mouth, and the other his right Ear; which made him start like one suddenly awak'd, observe us, and recollect the Occasion of our Attendance. Upon his speaking to me, I was flapp'd also, tho' I made Signs that I had no need of such an Instrument; which gave the King and the whole Court a very low Opinion of my Understanding. His Majesty, I apprehended, ask'd me several Questions, which I answered as well as I could: But when he found that I was a Stran-
ger

ger to their Language, being a Prince very remarkable for Hospitality ; I was, by his Order, allowed an Apartment in his Palace, and two Servants to attend me. Four Persons of Distinction, belonging to the Court, honoured me with their Company at Dinner, and we were serv'd with two Courses, of three Dishes each. In the first Course, we had a Shoulder of Mutton, cut in the Form of a Triangle ; a Piece of Beef into a Rhomboides, with a Pudding into a Cycloid. The second Course was a couple of Ducks, truss'd up like Fiddles ; Sauzages and Puddings in the Shape of Flutes and Haut-boys, and a Breast of Veal resembling a Harp ; our Bread being cut into Cones, Cylinders, and other mathematical Figures. I at this Time presumed to ask the Names of many Things in their Language, which the Persons of Quality, by the Means of their *Flappers*, were delighted in answering, thereby to increase my Admiration of their Abilities, when I should be able to converse with them. My Company withdrawing after Dinner, a Person, attended by a *Flapper*, came, by the King's Order, to teach me their Language, who brought with him Books, and all other Necessaries, for that Purpose. I took a
Lift

Lift of many Words in Writing, placing the Translations in Columns over against them, and, by the Care of my Tutor, I learn'd several short Sentences, which I also writ down. The Figures of the Sun, Moon, and Stars, the Zodiack, Tropicks, and Polar Circles, with those of many Planes and Solids, were likewise shewn me; and he taught me the Names of all the musical Instruments, describing the general Terms of Art, by playing on each of them. Upon his leaving me, I rang'd all my Words and their Interpretations alphabetically; and thus, having a good Memory, I soon became acquainted with their Language. *Laputa*, which I have translated the *Flying* or *Floating Island*, is a Word, whereof I could not learn the genuine Etymology: They say that *Laputa* is a Corruption of *Lapuntuh*, which is derived from *Lap*, in the ancient obsolete Language, signifying *High*, and *Untuh* a *Governor*: But, this Derivation seeming to be strain'd, I rather think that *Laputa* was *quasi Lap, outed*, *Lap* signifying strictly the Dancing of the Sun-Beams in the Ocean, and *outed* a Wing; and this Conjecture I ventured to propose to the Learned among them. My Cloths being observed to be very indifferent,

ferent, a Taylor was sent for to take my Measure for a new Suit, who did his Office in a different Manner from the Taylors in *Europe*. He took my Height by a Quadrant, and described the Dimensions of my Body with a Rule and Compasses; but, notwithstanding, by mistaking a Figure in the Calculation, my Cloths were wretchedly made, which is an Accident too frequent here to be much regarded. Being confined to my Chamber some Days for want of Cloths, and by an Indisposition, I made my Dictionary much larger; and, when I next waited on the King, understood many of his Words, and, after a Sort, returned him Answers. His Majesty having given Orders that the Island should move North-East and by East, to the vertical Point of *Lagado*, the Metropolis of his Dominions below upon the firm Earth, which was about ninety Leagues distant; we reached it in four Days and an half, tho' I was altogether insensible of the progressive Motion made in the Air by the Island. On the second Morning, the King himself, and the whole Court, having prepared all their musical Instruments, played on them for three Hours together, and quite stunned me with their Noise. My Tutor, finding that
I was

I was ignorant of the Meaning of this Performance, told me, that the People of this Island had their Ears adapted to hear the Musick of the Spheres, which always played at certain Times; and that the Court was now ready to bear their Part in whatever Instrument they most excelled. In our Voyage towards *Lagado*, by the King's Order, the Island stopp'd over several Towns and Villages, that from thence he might receive the Petitions of his Subjects. To this Purpose, Packthreads were let down by small Weights at the Bottom, on which the People strung their Petitions, and so they mounted up into the Air, like the Scraps of Paper fastened by School-Boys at the End of the String that holds their Kite; and Wine and Victuals, from below, were sometimes drawn up by Pullies.

My mathematical Knowledge was of great Use to me, in acquiring their Phra-seology, as well as my Skill in Musick; for their Language depends very much upon both these Sciences, and their Minds are perpetually employed about Lines and Figures. If they, for Instance, praise the Beauty of a Woman, or any other Animal, they describe it by geometrical or musical Terms; and I observed, that the
very

very Joints, which were serv'd to the King's Table, were mathematically dissected. Their Houses are very ill built, the Walls Bevil, having not so much as a right Angle in any Apartment; for as they despise practical Geometry as vulgar and Mechanical, so, their Instructions to their Work-men being too refin'd for their Capacities, they commit perpetual Blunders and Mistakes. They are dextrous enough, indeed, in the Management of the Rule, the Pencil, and the Divider, but, in the common Actions of Life, they are very awkward, and unhandy; and the slowest and most perplexed in their Conceptions on all Subjects, except Mathematicks and Musick, of any People that I have seen. They reason very badly, and are extreamly given to Contradiction, unless they chance to be in the right, which is not often their Case. They are utter Strangers to Wit, Fancy, and Invention; nor have they any Words in their Language, to express those Ideas, the foresaid Sciences engrossing the whole Compass of their Thoughts. Most of them, and especially their Astronomers, are much devoted to judicial Astrology, altho' they are asham'd to own it publickly: But their strong Dis-

Disposition towards News and Politicks, always enquiring into publick Affairs, I chiefly admired. The same Disposition I have observ'd among the greatest Part of the Mathematicians I have known in *Europe*, tho' there doth not seem to be the least Analogy between the two Sciences; unless they suppose, that, because the smallest Circle contains as many Degrees as the largest, the Government of the World requires no more Abilities, than the handling or turning of a Globe. But, in my Opinion, this Quality springs from that natural Inclination in Mankind to be more curious and conceited in Affairs where they are least concerned, and for which they are least qualified, either by Art or Nature. These People labour under continual Disquietudes, which arise from the various Changes they dread in the celestial Bodies: *e. g.* that the Earth, by the constant Approaches of the Sun towards it, will, in Process of Time, be absorb'd; that the Face of the Sun must, at length, be incrusted with its own Effluvia, and give no more Light; that the Earth very narrowly escap'd a Brush from the Tail of the last Comet, which would else have infallibly consum'd it; and that the next, which is to appear

one

one and thirty Years hence, will in all Probability destroy us; for if, in its Perihelion, it should approach within a certain Degree of the Sun (as according to their Calculations they find Reason to dread) its Heat will become ten thousand Times greater than that of red-hot glowing Iron; and, in its Aphelion, carry a blazing Tail ten hundred Thousand and fourteen Miles in Length; so that if the Earth should pass within one hundred thousand Miles of the *Nucleus*, or main Body of the Comet, it must, of course, be set on Fire, and reduced to Ashes; that the Sun daily wasting its Rays, without any Nourishment to supply them, will, in Time, be wholly consumed and annihilated; upon which must follow the Destruction of this Earth, and of all the other Planets that borrow their Light from the Sun. Such Apprehensions, as these, do so perpetually alarm them, that they can neither sleep with Comfort, nor have a Taste for the common Pleasures of Life. Upon their meeting an Acquaintance in the Morning, they, in the first Place, enquire concerning the Sun's Health and Aspect, and whether there be any Hopes of avoiding the fatal Influence of the approaching Comet.

This

This Kind of Conversation they enter into, with the same Disposition that Children express, who delight in Stories of Apparitions and Hobgoblins, attend to them with Greediness, and yet dare not go to Bed for Fear.

The Women of *Laputa* have a great Deal of Vivacity; they despise their Husbands, and are very fond of Strangers, whereof many, from the Continent below, attend at Court, either about the Business of the several Towns and Corporations, or their own private Affairs, altho' they are much contemned, for the Want of the same Endowments. Out of these, the Ladies chuse Lovers; but what's most vexing is, that they act with too much Ease and Safety, for, the Husband being always rapt in Thought, if he be but furnish'd with Paper and Instruments, and without his *Flapper*, the Mistress and her Gallant may proceed, even to Enjoyment, before his Face. Tho' this Island be the most delicious Tract of Ground in the World, and the Wives and Daughters live here in the most magnificent and plentiful Manner, being allowed to do whatever they please; yet they look upon their Abode in it as a Confinement, and long to see the Metropolis, which is not to be

be done without a special License from the King; and this is not to be had without Difficulty, because the Persons of Quality have often found it hard to prevail on their Women to return from below. I was informed, that a great Court-Lady, who had several Children, being Wife to the prime Minister, the wealthiest Subject in the Kingdom, a very comely Person, exceedingly fond of her, and dwells in the finest Palace of the whole Island, under the Pretence of Health, went to *Lagado*, and absconded there several Months, till the King, sending a Warrant to search for her, she was discovered in an obscure Eating-house all in Rags, having pawn'd her Cloths to support an old deform'd Footman, who daily beat her, and in whose Company she was apprehended much against her Will: But, although her Husband received her with all imaginable Kindness, not in the least reproaching her, she soon found an Opportunity of returning, with all her Jewels, to the same Gallant, and hath not been heard of since. The Reader may, possibly, take this to be an *European* or *English* Story, rather than one of *Laputa*; but he ought to consider, that the Caprices of Womenkind are not confined to any parti-

particular Climate, but that they are much more uniform than can easily be conceived. In a Month's Time, I made a pretty good Proficiency in the Language, and, when I was admitted to wait on the King, could answer most of his Questions. His Majesty was not in the least inquisitive about the Laws, Religion, Government, History, or Manners of the Countries where I had travelled, his Questions altogether turning upon the State of Mathematicks; and he received the Accounts I gave him, with no small Contempt and Indifferences, tho' often rouz'd by his *Flappers*.





CHAP. III.

A Phenomenon accounted for by modern Philosophy and Astronomy. The great Improvements of the Laputians in the latter. The King's Method of suppressing Insurrections.



Asked Leave of the King to see the Curiosities of the Island, who was graciously pleased to grant it, and appointed my Tutor to attend me. I was most desirous to learn the Cause of its several Motions, which I shall now philosophically relate to the Reader.

The flying or floating Island is exactly circular, and, being 7837 Yards in Diameter, or about four Miles and a half, contains ten thousand Acres. It is three hundred Yards in Thickness; and the under Surface, which is viewed from below, is an even regular adamantine Plate, about two hundred Yards high, over which lie the several Minerals in their usual Order, and, above all, is a rich Mould ten or twelve Feet deep. The Decl-

Declivity of the upper Surface is the natural Cause why all the Dews and Rains that fall on the Island, are conveyed in small Rivulets to the Middle, where they are emptied into four large Basons, each of which is about half a Mile in Circuit, and two hundred Yards from the Center. The perpetual Exhalations of the Sun in the Day-time, effectually hinder the Overflowing of the Water in those Basons; and besides, the Prince can, at any Time, by raising the Island above the Region of Clouds and Vapours, prevent the falling of Dews and Rains, for the highest Clouds cannot ascend higher than two Miles, according to the Naturalists, and, at least, never were known to rise above that Height in *Laputa*. At the Center of this Island, there is a Chasm about fifty Yards in Diameter, which leads into a large Dome, therefore called *Flandona Gagnole*, or the *Astronomer's Cave*, situated a hundred Yards beneath the upper Surface of the Adamant. In this Cave are twenty Lamps always burning, which being reflected by the Adamant, enlighten every Part of it. This Place is the Repository for a vast Variety of Sextants, Quadrants, Telescopes, Astrolabes, and other Astronomical Instruments. But the
 most

most surprising Curiosity, on which the Fate of the Island has a Dependence, is a Loadstone of prodigious Bulk, not unlike a Weaver's Shuttle, being six Yards long, and in the thickest Part at least three Yards over. It is sustained by an Axle of Adamant passing through its Middle, and is poised so truly, that a very weak Hand can turn it; it is also hooped round with an hollow Cylinder of Adamant, four Feet in Depth and Thickness, and twelve Yards in Diameter, placed Horizontally, and upheld by eight adamantine Feet, each six Yards high; and in the Middle of the concave Side there is a Groove twelve Inches deep, wherein the Extremities of the Axle are lodged, and turned round when there is Occasion. This Magnet is immoveable, for the Hoop and its Feet are of a Piece with the Body of Adamant, which constitutes the Bottom of the Island. The Island rises and sinks, and moves from Place to Place, by Means of the Loadstone; for, as to that Part of the Earth over which the King presides, it is endued at one Side with an attractive, and at the other with a repulsive Power. If the Magnet be placed erect, with its attracting Extremity towards the Earth, the Island falls; but when

when the repelling End points downwards, it directly ascends, and if its Position be oblique, the Motion of the Island is so too, the Forces of the Loadstone always acting in Lines parallel to its Direction. By this oblique Motion the Island is conveyed to different Parts of the King's Dominions, but it cannot move beyond the Extent of them below, nor ascend above the Height of four Miles; because, as the Astronomers alledge, the magnetick Virtue does not extend farther than four Miles, and that the Mineral, which acts upon the Stone in the Bowels of the Earth, and in the Sea about six Leagues from the Shore, is confined within the Bounds of the Monarch's Dominions; and the mighty Advantage of such a superior Situation rendered it easy for a Prince, to reduce under his Obedience all Countries lying within the Attraction of that Magnet. When the Stone is placed parallel to the Plane of the Horizon, the Island standeth still, for, its Ends being equally distant from the Earth, acting with equal Force, the one in pulling downwards, the other in pushing upwards, it can have no other Motion at all.

C

This

This Magnet is under the Direction of certain Astronomers, who place it in whatever Position his Majesty pleases, and employ the greatest Part of their Lives, in making Observations upon the heavenly Bodies, wherein they are assisted by Glasses much better than ours. By means of this Advantage, they have made many more Discoveries than our *European* Astronomers; for their Catalogue of fix'd Stars contains ten Thousand, tho' in the largest of ours we have not above a third Part of that Number. They have also discovered two smaller Stars, or *Satellites*, that revolve about *Mars*, the innermost of which is distant from the primary Planet three of his Diameters, and the outermost five, the former revolving in ten Hours, and the latter in twenty One and a half; so that the Squares of their periodical Times are very near proportional to the Cubes of their Distance from the Center of *Mars*; from which it evidently appears, that they are under the Influence of that Law of Gravitation, by which are governed the other celestial Bodies. It is confidently affirmed, that they have observed no less than ninety three Comets, and exactly settled their several Periods; if this be Fact, it

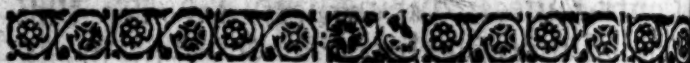
much to be wish'd, that their Observations were publish'd, which might bring the present defective Theory of Comets to as great Perfection as any other Parts of Astronomy.

The King would be the most absolute Prince in the World, if his Ministry could be prevailed on to join with him; but these, being possess'd of Estates below the Continent, and reflecting upon the Uncertainty of a Court-Favourite's Office, would never consent that their Country should be enslaved. When any Town engages in a Rebellion or Mutiny, becomes factious, or will not pay the usual Tribute, the Monarch hath two Ways of bringing them to Obedience. The milder Method is, by letting the Clouds hover over such a Town, and the Winds adjacent, which deprives the Inhabitants of the Benefit of the Sun and Rain, and of Course afflicts them with Death and Diseases; besides, if the Crime deserves it, they are pelted from above with large Stones, to avoid which, they creep into Cellars or Caves, whilst the Roofs of their Houses are beaten to Pieces: But if, notwithstanding all this, they persist in their Obstinacy, he then has Recourse to the last and severest Re-

medy, by letting the Island fall directly upon their Heads, which makes an universal Havock both of Houses and Men. The Monarch is seldom driven to this Extremity, being himself unwilling to put it in Execution; and, should his Ministers advise him to such an Action, it would not only expose them to the Hatred of the People, but would be of great Prejudice to their own Estates, which are all below, for the Island is the King's Demesne; but the most weighty Reason of the Prince's Averseness to such a terrible Punishment, unless compell'd by the last Necessity, is, that if the Town to be destroy'd have in it any tall Rocks or abound in high Spires or Pillars of Stone, it might endanger the under Surface of the Island, tho' it be one continued Piece of Adamant of vast Thickness by either cracking, through too great Choque, or bursting, by too near an Approach to the Fires from the Houses below, as the Backs both of Iron and Stone often do in our Chimnies. The People being appriz'd of this, know how far to proceed in their Obstinacy, where their Liberty or Property is concern'd; and the Prince, when most provok'd, instead of laying a City in Rubbish, orders the Island

Island to descend very gently, pretending therein a Tenderness for his Subjects, but in Reality for Fear of breaking the adamantine Bottom ; for, in this Case, it is thought, by all their Philosophers, that the Magnet could no longer sustain it, but the whole Mass must fall into Confusion. It is a fundamental Law of this Kingdom, that neither the King, his two elder Sons, nor the Queen, till she is past Child-bearing, shall leave the Island.





CHAP. IV.

The Author, leaving Laputa, is convey'd to Balnibarbi, and arrives at the Metropolis. A Description of the Metropolis, and the Country adjacent. The Author hospitably entertained by a great Lord. His Conversation with him.

TH O' I was not ill used in this Island, yet I thought my self too much neglected, and in some Measure despised; for, neither Prince nor People being versed in any Branch of Knowledge, besides Mathematicks and Musick, I was much their inferior in these Sciences, and therefore very little respected. On the other Hand, as I had seen all the Curiosities of the Island, I was extreamly willing to leave it, being heartily weary of its Inhabitants; for the People, being rapt in abstract Speculations, were very disagreeable Companions, and I had none to converse with

but Women, Mechanicks, Flappers, and Court-Pages, during two Months that I resided here, which rendered me very contemptible ; and yet from those Persons alone I received reasonable Answers. There was a great Lord at Court, who, because he was a near Relation of the King's, met with Respect, but was generally reckon'd the most unthinking and stupid Person among them. Though he had perform'd many important Services for the Crown, had uncommon natural and acquired Parts, and was a Person of Integrity and Honour ; yet, 'tis reported by his Detractors, that he has often beat Time improperly, and that his Tutors could not, without great Pains, teach him to demonstrate the most obvious Propositions in the Mathematicks. This Nobleman, who gave me many Proofs of his Friendship, would often, in his Visits, enquire about the Affairs of *Europe*, and listen to me very attentively, making also the wisest Remarks on what was said. He kept, indeed, two Flappers for State, who never attended him, except at Court or in Visits of Ceremony, for they always withdrew, when we were together alone. This illustrious Personage I made use of, to obtain Leave of the

C 4

King

King for my Departure, which he did, with Regret; for he had made several advantageous Proposals to me, which I refused.

On the 16th of *February*, I took Leave of the Prince and his Court, his Majesty making me a Present to the Value of about two hundred Pounds *English*, and my Protector as much more, with a Letter to a Friend of his in the Metropolis; and, the Island then hovering about two Miles from it, I was let down in the same Manner as I had been taken up. That Part of the Continent, which belongs to the Monarch of *Laputa*, is called *Barnibarbi*, and the Metropolis, *Lagado*. I was somewhat satisfied to find my self on *Terra firma*, and went to the City without any Concern, being cloath'd like the Natives, and able to converse with them. Having soon found out the Person's House, to whom I was recommended, I delivered him the Letter from his Friend in the Island, and he gave me a very kind Reception; for this Lord, whose Name was *Munodi*, allowed me an Apartment in his own House, where I remain'd, during my Stay in *Lagado*, and was treated in the most obliging Manner.

The

The next Morning, he took me in his Chariot to see the City, which is about half as large as *London*, but the Houses are strangely built, and the greatest Part of them want to be repaired. The People in the Streets walk'd fast, had a wild Aspect, their Eyes being fixed, and were most of them in Rags. Passing through one of the City-Gates, we went three Miles into the Country, where I observed many Labourers at Work, with several Sorts of Tools in the Ground, but could not guess what they were doing, nor did I see the least Hopes either of Corn or Grass, tho' the Soil seem'd to be excellent. These odd Sights, both in Town and Country, fill'd me with Admiration; and I made bold to desire my Conductor, that he would explain to me the Meaning of so many busy Heads, Hands, and Faces, because I did not find that they produced any good Effects; but, on the other Hand, I never saw a Soil so wretchedly cultivated, Houses so ill contrived and ruinous, or any People, whose Looks and Habit expressed so much Want and Misery.

The Lord *Munodi* was a Grandee of the first Rank, and had been some Years Governor of *Lagado*, but, by a Ca-
bal

bal of Ministers, was removed for Insufficiency ; tho' the King treated him with Tenderneſs, as an honeſt Man, but of a ſlender Capacity. In Answer to my Enquiry, my Lord told me, that I had not been long enough in the Country, to form a right Judgment of the Manners of its Inhabitants ; that different Nations had different Customs, with other Things to the ſame Purpose. When we return'd to his Palace, he ask'd my Opinion about the Buildings, and how I lik'd the Dreſs and Countenances of his Domeſticks ; which he might with Safety do, becauſe all Things about him were magnificent, uniform, and polite ? I answered, that the Defects, occaſioned by the Folly and Poverty of others, were prevented by his Lordſhip's Wiſdom, Quality, and Fortune. He ſaid, if I would go with him to his Country - Houſe, about twenty Miles from the Town, where his Eſtate lay, we ſhould have more Time for ſuch Converſation as this ; and when I had gratefully accepted this kind Invitation, it was determined that we ſhould ſet out the next Morning. As we proceeded in our Journey, he let me into the Methods uſed by the Farmers in managing their Lands, which to me were altogether unac-

unaccountable, for in very many Places I could not observe so much as a single Ear of Corn or Blade of Grass: But, in the Space of three Hours, we came into a delightful Country, the Farmers Houses at small Distances, neatly built, the Land fenced, containing Vineyards, Cornfields, and Meadows, nor did I ever see a more beautiful Prospect. His Excellency, observing my Countenance clear up, told me with a Sigh, that here his Estate began, and would continue the same, until we came to his House; that his Countrymen despised him for managing his Affairs so ill, and for giving so bad an Example to the Kingdom; which, however, was follow'd but by a very few, that were old, weak, and wilful, like himself. At length we came to his Lordship's House, a magnificent Structure, built according to the best Rules of ancient Architecture. The Fountains, Gardens, Walks, Avenues, and Groves, did all discover a nice Judgment, and elegant Taste. Tho' I praised every Thing I saw, his Lordship did not in the least take Notice of what I spoke, until we were alone after Supper; when he told me with Concern, that he fear'd he must be obliged to demolish his Houses, both

in

in Town and Country, to rebuild them after the modern Mode, root up all his Plantations, and cast them into the usual Form, and order his Tenants to do the same, unless he would be censur'd as proud, singular, affected, ignorant, capricious, and, perhaps, increase the King's Displeasure. He assured me, that my Admiration would cease, or abate, when I should be inform'd of some Particulars, which in all Probability I never was told at Court, the People there little regarding what happens below.

The Sum of his Discourse was, as follows, viz. That, forty Years ago, some Persons went up to *Laputa*, either on Business or for Pleasure, who, being several Months there, at length return'd with a very small smattering of Mathematicks, altho' full of volatile Spirits acquir'd in that airy Region. That these Persons, disliking the Management of every Thing below, advanc'd Schemes for setting all Arts, Sciences, Languages, and Mechanics on a new Foot; and for this Purpose obtained the King's Patent, for Founding an Academy of PROJECTORS in *Lagado*, the Humour taking so very much with the People, that there is not a considerable Town in the Kingdom without

out an Academy. In these Colleges the Professors invent new Rules and Methods of Agriculture and Building, as also new Tools for all Trades and Manufactures, whereby one Man shall do the Work of Ten, and a Palace may be so built in a Week's Time, as to last for ever, without repairing. They undertake likewise, to contrive a Method, by which the Fruits of the Earth shall ripen, when we please, and produce an hundred Fold more than it does at present, with numberless other great Proposals, tho' none of those Projects are yet brought to Maturity, and the Country all the while lies waste, the Houses are ruinous, and the Inhabitants starving and in Rags. These Things, instead of being Discouragements to them, make them fifty Times more eager in the Pursuit of their Schemes, Hope and Despair equally urging them. My Lord further told me, that, for his own Part, being not of a projecting Spirit, he was content to tread in the Steps of his Ancestors, live as they did, and act like them in every Particular; that a few others among the Quality and Gentry had done the same, but were despised and hated, as Enemies to Art, ignorant and regardless of their Country,

pre-

preferring their own Ease and Indolence to the publick Good. His Excellency being unwilling to prevent the Pleasure I should have, in seeing the grand Academy, concluded his Discourse, with desiring me to observe a ruinous Building on the Side of a Mountain, about three Miles distant, of which he gave me the following Account: That he had a very useful Mill, within half a Mile of his House, and turned by a Current from a large River, which not only served his own Family, but many of his Tenants: That, about seven Years ago, a Sett of those Projectors propos'd to destroy this Mill, and build another on the Side of that Mountain, on the long Ridge whereof a large Canal must be cut for a Reservoir of Water, to be convey'd by Pipes and Engines to supply the Mill; because the Wind and Air upon a Height agitated the Water, and so made it fitter for Motion; and because the Water, descending from an Height, would turn the Mill with half the Current of a River, which runs more upon a Level: He said, that not being at this Time very well with the Court, and press'd by many of his Friends, he fell in with the Proposal; and, tho' he had employ'd an hundred
Men.

Men, for two Years, the Design miscarried, the Projectors going off, laying the whole Blame on him, in abusing him ever since, and putting others on the same Project, with as great Assurance of Success, and equal Disappointment. In a few Days we return'd to *Lagado*; and his Lordship, not caring to go with me to the Academy himself, where he was despis'd and hated, prevail'd upon a Friend of his to accompany me thither; and his Excellency was pleas'd to tell him, that I was a great Admirer of new Schemes, and a Person very curious and credulous, which was far from being false, for in my Youth I my self had been a kind of a Projector.





C H A P. V.

The Author admitted to see the Grand Academy of Lagado. The Academy described at large. The Arts wherein the Professors employ themselves.

THIS Academy is a Continuation of several Houses on both Sides of the Street, which, becoming waste, were purchased and applied to that Use. The Warden received me kindly, and I went for many Days to the Academy. There is not a single Room without one or more Projectors, tho' I believe there are at least five hundred Rooms. The first Projector I saw had a meagre Aspect, footy Hands and Face, with his Hair and Beard long, ragged, and sing'd in many Places; and his Cloths, Shirt, and Skin were all of a Colour. He had been eight Years labouring to extract Sun-Beams out of Cucumbers, which were to be kept in Vials hermetically sealed, to warm the Air in

in inclement Seasons. He assured me, that, in eight Years more, he should be able to supply the Governor's Gardens with Sun-shine at a reasonable Rate; but in the mean time he complained, that his Stock was near exhausted, and intreated me to give him something, as an Encouragement to Ingenuity, and the rather, because Cucumbers had been very dear this Season. I made him a small Present, his Lordship having furnished me with Money on Purpose, because he knew that they beg from all that go to see them. Passing into another Chamber, I could hardly forbear running back, being almost overcome with an horrible Stink; but my Guide forced me forward, and conjured me in a Whisper not to give them the least Offence, which they would highly resent, so that I durst not so much as stop my Nose: This Cell belong'd to the most ancient Student of the Academy, whose Face and Beard were of a pale Yellow, his Hands and Cloths being dawb'd over with Filth. When I was presented to him, he embraced me very closely; (which Compliment I could have very well spared.) This Projector, has been employed, ever since his Admission into the Academy, about

about an Experiment to reduce human Ordure to its original Food, by separating its several Parts, taking off the Tincture it receives from the Gall, causing the Odour to exhale, and Scumming of the Saliva; and he is allowed every Week by the Society a Vessel of human Ordure, as big as a *Bristol* Barrel.

Another I saw at work, to calcine Ice into Gunpowder, who shew'd me a Treatise he had compos'd on the Malleability of Fire, which he design'd to publish. There was a very ingenious Architect, who had projected a new Method of building Houses, by beginning at the Roof and ending at the Foundation, wherein, he told me, he followed the prudent Examples of the Bee and the Spider. There was likewise a Projector born blind, who had several Apprentices in the same Condition: Their Business was to mix Colours for Painters, which they were taught by their Master to distinguish by the Senses of Feeling and Smelling. I found them at this Time not very expert in their Lessons, and their Professor himself was generally mistaken; but, this Artist is, notwithstanding, encouraged and respected by the whole Society. I was extremely pleas'd with a Man in another Apartment,

ment, who had invented a Device, of ploughing Land with Hogs, to save the Expence of Plows, Cattle, and Labour. If you would use his Method, in an Acre of Ground bury, at six Inches Distance, and eight in Depth, a Quantity of Acorns, Dates, Chestnuts, and other Things of which Hogs are fondest; then drive six Hundred or more of these Animals into the Field, and in a little Time they will root up the Land, and make it fit for sowing, manuring it also with their Dung. It is certain, upon Trial, they found the Charge and Trouble very considerable, and the Crop very small; yet it is not question'd but this Invention may admit of great Improvements. I observ'd, in another Room, all the Walls and Cieling hung round with Cobwebs, except a narrow Passage left for the Artist to go in and out at: No sooner had I enter'd, than he loudly call'd to me, not to disorder his Webs. He was concern'd that the World had so long given Way to a fatal Error, in using Silk-worms, when we abound so much in Spiders, which infinitely excel them, because they know how to weave as well as spin. He propos'd further, that, by employing those domestick Animals, the Charge of dying Silks

Silks would be wholly saved, which he made evident to me, by shewing us a vast Variety of Flies most beautifully colour'd, with which he fed his Spiders, assuring us that the Webs would derive a Tincture from them; and, as he was furnish'd with Flies of all Colours, he hop'd to please every one's Fancy, as soon as he should discover proper Food for them of certain Gums, Oils, and other glutinous Matter, to give a Strength and Consistence to the Threads. I saw an Astronomer, who propos'd to fix a Sundial upon the Weather-cock on the Town-house, by adjusting the annual and diurnal Motions of the Earth and Sun to the accidental Turnings of the Wind. Upon my complaining of a Fit of the Cholick, I was led into the Room of a Physician, who was famous for curing this Distemper by contrary Operations from the same Instrument. He was furnish'd with a large Pair of Bellows, that had a long, slender, ivory Muzzle, which he convey'd eight Inches up the Anus; and, drawing in the Wind, he said he could render the Guts as lank as a dried Bladder. But if the Disease was more obstinate and violent, he put in the Muzzle, while the Bellows were full of Wind, which he dis-

discharged into the Patient's Body, and then withdrew the Instrument to replenish it, clapping his Thumb strongly against the Orifice of the Fundament; and this Operation being three or four times repeated, the adventitious Wind, rushing out, would bring the noxious along with it (like Water put into a Pump) and so cure the Patient. Having seen him try both these Experiments on a Dog, I did not observe any Effect from the former. After the latter, the Animal was ready to burst, making a violent Discharge that was very offensive to us. The Dog died on the Spot, and we left the Doctor attempting to recover him by the same Operation. We visited many other Apartments, but, being studious of Brevity, I shall not enter into an Account of all the Curiosities I observ'd in them.

As yet I had only seen one Side of the Academy, the other belonging to the Improvers of speculative Learning, whom I shall describe, as soon as I have taken Notice of an illustrious Person, who is call'd among them, *The universal Artist*. He told us, he had been for thirty Years employing his Mind, for the Benefit of Mankind. He had as many Curiosities as fill'd two large Rooms, and fifty Men at Work.

Some

Some were condensing Air into a dry tangible Substance, by extracting the Nitre, and percolating the aqueous or fluid Particles; others softening Marble for Pillows and Pincushions; whilst others were petrifying the Hoofs of a living Horse, to keep them from foundering. The Artist himself was now very intent upon two important Designs; the one to sow Land with Chaff, which, in his Opinion, contain'd the true seminal Virtue, as he demonstrated by several Experiments, which were above my Comprehension. The other was, by a Composition of certain Gums, Minerals, and Vegetables, to hinder the Growth of Wooll upon two young Lambs; and he hop'd, in Time, to propagate the Breed of naked Sheep over all Parts of the Kingdom. Having cross'd a Walk to the other Side of the Academy, where the Projectors of speculative Learning reside; the first I saw was a Professor in a very large Room, with forty Pupils about him. After Salutation, he observ'd me to take particular Notice of a Frame, which almost fill'd the Room, and told me that I might, perhaps, wonder at his Project for improving speculative Knowledge by practical and mechanical Operations; but that the World would soon

soon be convinc'd of its Usefulness; and he was so vain as to fancy, that a sublimer Thought was never conceiv'd by any other Man. The Difficulty of attaining to Arts and Sciences, by the common Method, he said, was notorious to all; whereas, by his Contrivance, the most ignorant, at a moderate Charge, and with a little bodily Labour, may write in Philosophy, Poetry, Politicks, Law, Mathematicks, and Divinity, having no Occasion for Genius or Study. Upon this he led me to the Frame, about the Sides whereof his Scholars stood in Ranks, which was twenty Foot square, plac'd in the Middle of the Room. The Superficies consisted of several Bits of Wood, about the Bulk of a Dye, tho' not all of a Size. These were link'd together by slender Wires, and cover'd on every Square with Paper pasted on them, on which Papers were written all the Words of their Language, tho' without any Order, in their several Moods, Tenses, and Declensions. The Professor, just going to set his Engine at Work, desir'd me to observe it: The Pupils, by his Direction, took each of them hold of an Iron Handle, there being forty Handles plac'd round the Edges of the Frame, and, upon giving them a sudden

Turn,

Turn, the Disposition of the Words was entirely transpos'd. Six and thirty Boys were appointed to read the Lines softly, as they appeared upon the Frame; and, when they observed three or four Words together, that might make Part of a Sentence, they dictated to the other four Lads who were Scribes. This Work was repeated several Times, and at every Turn the Machine was so managed, that the Words shifted into different Places, as the square Bits of Wood mov'd upside down. Six Hours a-day the Pupils were thus employ'd; and the Professor shew'd me a Collection of broken Sentences, in several Volumes in Folio, which he design'd to join together, and out of such valuable Materials to give the Publick a compleat Body of all Arts and Sciences; which yet might be farther improv'd, and sooner dispatch'd, if a Fund were raised to set up five hundred such Frames in *Lagado*, and the Managers obliged to contribute, in common, what they had severally collected. He told me, that this Invention had, from his Youth, taken up all his Thoughts; that the whole Vocabulary was employ'd into his Frame, and that he had, with the utmost Strictness, computed the general Proportion there

is in the Book, between the Numbers of Particles, Nouns, Verbs, and other Parts of Speech. I, in the most respectful Manner, acknowledged the great Communicativeness of this illustrious Projector, and assured him, that, whenever it was my good Fortune to return to my native Country, I would represent him as the sole Inventor of this wonderful Engine, a Draught of which I had Leave to delineate on Paper; and that, altho' the Learned in *Europe* frequently steal Inventions one from another, I would take particular Care to do him so much Justice, that he should have the Honour to himself, without a Rival.

We next visited the School of Language, where three Professors sat consulting, how to improve that of their own Country, for the doing of which two Projects were proposed. The first was to shorten Discourse, by contracting Polysyllables into one, and throwing out Verbs and Participles, because, properly speaking, all Things are but Nouns. The other Scheme was contrived to abolish all Words whatsoever; and this was argued to be no small Advantage, in respect of Health as well as Brevity; for every Word we speak does, in some Degree,

D

cor-

corrode, and thereby diminish our Lungs, and consequently contributes to shorten our Days. An Expedient was therefore offer'd, that since Words are no more than the Names of *Things*, it would be better for all Men to carry about with them such *Things* as were requisite to express what they are to discourse on. This Invention would certainly have prevailed, if the Women, joined with the Vulgar and Illiterate, had not threatened to raise a Rebellion, if they should be denied the same Liberty of speaking with their Tongues, which was allow'd to their Ancestors; such obstinate implacable Enemies to Science are the common People. Many of the wisest and most learned, notwithstanding, complied with this new Scheme, which hath in it only one Inconvenience, that if a Man's Business be very great, and of several Kinds, he is obliged to carry a proportionable Burthen of *Things* on his Back, unless he can afford one or two stout Servants to attend him. I have often seen two of those Sages ready to sink under the Weight of their Packs, like our Pedlars; who, meeting in the Streets, would lay down their Loads, open their Saddles, and converse for an Hour together; then put up their Implements, af-

assist each other in resuming their Burthens, and take their Leave. A Man may carry Implements in his Pockets and under his Arms, sufficient to serve for short Conversations, and at Home he can never be at a Loss; therefore the Room, where Company meet that practises this Art, is furnish'd with all *Things* necessary for this Sort of artificial Converse. There was another great Advantage propos'd by this Expedient, that it might serve as an universal Language in all civiliz'd Nations, whose Utensils are generally of the same Kind, or so much alike, that their Uses would be easily understood; by this Means also Ambassadors might treat with foreign Courts, tho' they were utter Strangers to their Tongues. When I was at the Mathematical School, I found the Master taught his Scholars, after a Method scarce imaginable to us Europeans. The Proposition and Demonstration were plainly written on a thin Wafer, with Ink made of a Cephalick Tincture, which the Pupil was to swallow upon a fasting Stomach, and, for three Days after, live upon nothing but Bread and Water. As the Wafer digests, the Tincture mounts to the Student's Brain, carrying the Proposition along with it: But

as yet the Success hath not been answerable, partly by some Mistake in the Quantity, and partly by the Perverseness of the Boys, to whom this Bolus is so nauseous, that they commonly discharge it upwards, before it can have any Influence, nor have they been hitherto prevailed with to abstain so long as the Prescription directs.





CHAP. VI.

A further Account of the Academy. The Author proposeth some Improvements which are honourably received.

IN the School of Political Projectors, I met with but little Entertainment, the Professors being, in my Opinion, entirely mad, which is a Scene that always makes me melancholy. These unhappy Men were advancing Projects for persuading Princes to chuse none for their Favourites, but such as were furnish'd with Wisdom, Capacity, and Vertue; for instructing Ministers to consult the Good of the Publick; for rewarding Merit; and teaching Monarchs to study their own Interest, by placing it on the same Bottom with that of their Subjects, and to fix none in any Offices that were not qualified to discharge them; with many other extravagant Chimera's, that never before enter'd into the Mind of Man to conceive, and establish'd the

old Observation, that there is nothing so wild and irrational which some Philosophers have not asserted for Truth. But it must be confessed, that all the Professors of this Academy were not so visionary ; for among them there was a very ingenious Doctor, who seem'd perfectly to understand the whole Nature and System of Government. This excellent Person was very usefully employ'd in finding out proper Remedies for all Diseases, incident to the various Kinds of publick Administration, whether they proceed from the Vices and Infirmities of the Governors themselves, or from the Licentiousness of their Subjects. For Example ; since it is allowed by all Writers and Reasoners, that there is a strict and universal Resemblance between the natural and the political Body ; Can any Thing be more manifest, than that the Diseases of both must be cured by the same Medicines ? It will not be denied, that Senates and great Councils are frequently troubled with redundant, ebullient, and other vicious Humours, with many Maladies of the Head, but more of the Heart ; with violent Contractions of the Nerves and Sinews in both Hands, but especially in the Right ; with Spleen, Flatus, Verti-

goes,

goes, and Deliriums; with scrophulous Tumours fill'd with foetid Corruption; with canine Appetites, and Crudeness of Digestion, besides several others that need not be mention'd. The Doctor therefore laid down this Prescription, that, upon the Meeting of a Senate, some Physicians should attend them, on the three first Days of their Sitting, and, at the Close of each Day's Debate, feel the Pulses of every Senator; then, having maturely consulted upon the Nature of the several Diseases, and Method of Cure, they should on the fourth Day return to the Senate-House, accompanied by their Apothecaries provided with effectual Medicines, and, before the Members sat, administer to them, severally, Lenitives, Aperitives, Abstersives, Corrosives, Restrictives, Laxatives, Cephalalgicks, Ictericks, Apophlegmaticks, &c. as each of their Cases required, and, as you find these Medicines operate, repeat, vary, or omit them at the next Meeting. This Project would be very little expensive to the Publick, and would be of great Service for the Dispatch of Business, in Countries where Senates have a Share in the legislative Power, by begetting Unanimity, shortening Debates, opening a

few Mouths, which are, at present, closed, and closing many more that are now open; restraining the Petulancy of the Young, and correcting the Positiveness of the Old; rousing the Stupid, and damping the Pert.

Again, it being a common Complaint, that the Favourites of Princes have defective Memories, the Doctor advised, that whoever waited on a prime Minister, having told his Business with the utmost Brevity and Plainness, should, at his Departure, give him a Tweak by the Nose, or a Kick on the Belly, tread on his Corns, lug him thrice by the Ears, stick a Pin in his Breech, or pinch his Arm, and, on every Levee-Day, repeat the same Operation, until either his Business were done, or he had received an absolute Refusal. He farther prescribed, that every Senator, when he had given his Opinion in the Senate-House, and defended it by Argument, should be obliged to vote directly contrary; because, by this Means, the Result would infallibly issue in the Good of the Publick. To reconcile violent Partymen in a State, he offer'd an admirable Contrivance; viz. Take an hundred Leaders of each Party, disposing of them into
Couples

Couples of such whose Heads are nearest of a Size ; then let two curious Artists saw off the *Occiput* of each Couple at the same time, that the Brain may be divided into equal Parts. When the *Occiputs* are thus cut off, let them be interchanged, applying each to the Head of his opposite Partyman. This seems indeed, to be a Work that requires some Nicety ; but the Professor declar'd, that, provided it were perform'd with Exactness, the Cure would be infallible ; for he argued, that the two half Brains, being left to debate the Point, within the Space of one Skull, would soon come to an Agreement, and produce Moderation and Regularity of thinking, in the Heads of those, who fancy they are born only to watch and govern the Motion of the World : And the Difference of Brains, either in Quantity or Quality, the Doctor assured us from his own Knowledge, was a meer Trifle. I heard a very warm Dispute between two Professors, about the most proper and convenient Ways of raising Money, without oppressing the Subject. The one affirm'd the fairest Method would be to lay a Tax upon Vices and Folly, and the Sum, which every Man should pay, to be rated

by

D 5

by a Jury of his Neighbours. The other was for taxing those Qualities of Body and Mind, for which Men chiefly value themselves, and would have the Rate to bear Proportion to the Degrees of Excellency, the Decision of which should be left entirely to their own Judgment. The greatest Tax was upon Men that are most in Favour with the female Sex, and the Assessments according to the Quantity and Quality of the Favours they have received, for which they are permitted to be their own Vouchers. Wit, Courage, and Politeness were also propos'd to be highly taxed, and collected in the same Manner: But Honour, Justice, Wisdom, and Learning were not to be taxed at all, being Qualifications of such an extraordinary Nature, that no Man will either allow his Neighbour to have them, or value them in himself.

The Women were to be taxed, in Proportion to their Beauty and Skill in Dress, which was to be determined by themselves: But Constancy, Chastity, good Sense, and good Nature, were not rated, because they would not answer the Charge of collecting. To keep Senators in the Interest of the Government,

ment, it was proposed that the Members should raffle for Employments, each of them first taking an Oath, and giving Security that he would vote on the Side of the Court, whether he won or lost; and afterwards the Losers, in their Turns, had the Privilege of raffling on the next Vacancy. This Method would keep alive the Hopes of all, for none would complain of broken Promises, but impute their Disappointments to Fortune alone, whose Shoulders are broader than those of a Ministry.

Another Professor was pleased to shew me a Paper of Instructions, for detecting Plots and Conspiracies against the Government. He directed Statesmen to look into the Diet of all suspected Persons; examine their Times of eating; how they lay in Bed, whether on the right or left Side; with which Hand they wip'd their Posteriors; make a strict Search into their Excrements, and from the Colour, Smell, and Taste, the Consistence, the Crudeness, or Maturity of Digestion, judge of their Intention; because Men are never so thoughtful, as when at Stool, which he learn'd by repeated Experiments; for when he used, purely as a
Trial,

Trial, to consider about the best Way of murdering the King, his Ordure had a Tincture of Green, but quite the reverse, when he design'd only to raise an Insurrection, or set Fire to the Metropolis. The whole Discourse was very ingeniously written, and contain'd many curious Observations, useful for Politicians; but, in my Opinion, was not a finish'd Piece, as I freely told the Author, offering, if he pleas'd to make it more compleat by some Additions. He accepted of my Proposal with more Compliance than is common among Writers, particularly Projectors, declaring he would be glad to hear what I had to say. I told him, that should I live in a Kingdom, where Plots and Conspiracies were in Vogue, either from the turbulent Tempers of the meaner People, or might be improv'd to the Service and Advantage of the higher Rank among them, it would be my first Care to countenance and encourage the Fry of Discoverers, Witnesses, Informers, Accusers, Prosecutors, Evidences, Swearers, and all their subaltern Instruments; when I had a sufficient Number of them, of all Sorts and Capacities, I would place them under

der the Conduct of some dextrous Politicians, able both to protect and reward them. Men, thus qualified and empowered, might render Plots extremely useful and advantageous; they might raise their own Characters, and pass for most profound Statesmen; they might give new Life to a crazy Administration; stifle or divert general Discontents; load their Pockets with Forfeitures, and advance or sink publick Credit, as either best answered their own private Ends. This might be done by first determining among themselves, what suspected Persons should be accused of a Plot; then particular Care is taken to secure all their Letters and Papers, and put the Criminal in safe Custody. These Papers might be committed to the Management of a Sett of Artists, of Penetration, sufficient to discover the mystical Meanings of Words, Syllables, and Letters. They should be allow'd to interpret them, as they pleased, give them a Sense not only foreign, but directly contrary to their true Intent and Meaning: As, for Instance, they may interpret, if it suit their Fancies, a *Sieve* to signify a *Court-Lady*, a *lame Dog* an *Invader*,

Invasion, the Plague a standing Army, a Buzzard a great Politician, the Gout a High-Priest, a Chamber-pot a Committee of Noblemen, a Broom a Revolution, a Mousetrap an Office, a Bottomless-pit a Treasury, Sink a Court, a Cap and Bells a Favourite, a broken Reed a Court of Justice, an empty Tun a General, a running Sore an Administration.

But, if this Method should fail, there are others more effectual still behind, by the Learned called *Acrosticks* and *Anagrams*. First, might be found skilful and penetrating Men, who can discern that all initial Letters have political Meanings. Thus N shall mean a Plot, B a Regiment of Horse, L a Fleet at Sea. Or secondly, who, by transposing the Letters of the Alphabet, in any suspected Paper, can find out the deepest Designs of a discontented Party. *e. g.* If I should write in a Letter to Friend, *Our Brother Tom has just got the Piles*, an Artist, this Way, could analyse the Letters of that Sentence into the following Words; *Resist, ——— A Plot is brought Home. ——— The Tower.* Which is the anagrammatick Method. The Professor made me thankful

ful Acknowledgments for communicating these Observations, and promised to take honourable Notice of me in his Treatise; and, seeing nothing that could invite me to a longer Continuance in this Country, I entertained Thoughts of returning to *England*.





C H A P. VII.

The Author, leaving Lagado, arrives at Maldonada. No Ship ready. He takes a Trip to Glubbubdrib. His Reception by the Governor.

TH E Continent, of which this Kingdom is a Part, extends it self Eastward to that unknown Tract of *America*, Westward of *California*, North to the pacifick Ocean, which is about an hundred and fifty Miles from *Lagado*, where there is a convenient Port and much Traffick, with the great Island of *Luggnagg*, situated to the North-West about 29 Degrees North Latitude, and 140 Longitude. The Island of *Luggnagg* lies South-Eastwards of *Japan*, about an hundred Leagues Distance. There being a strict Alliance between the *Japanese* Emperor and the King of *Luggnagg*, the People of both these

these Islands have frequent Occasions of Sailing from one to the other. I resolved, therefore, to return this Way to *Europe*; and hired two Mules, with a Guide to conduct me, and carry my Baggage. I took Leave of his Excellency, my Protector, who had been so generous to me, and made me a handsome Present, at my Departure. I met with nothing remarkable in my Journey; and when I arrived at the Port of *Mal-donada*, there was no Ship in the Harbour bound for *Luggnagg*, nor like to be for some Time. The Town is about the Bigness of *Portsmouth*; and I soon fell into some Acquaintance, and was very kindly received. A Person of Distinction told me, that seeing it would be, at least, a Month, before the Ships bound for *Luggnagg* could be ready, it might be an agreeable Amusement for me to take a Trip to the Island of *Glubb-dub-drib*, about five Leagues off to the South-West. He offered himself and a Friend to be my Companions, and that I should be furnished with a convenient Barque for the Voyage.

Glubb-

Glubbdubdrib, as nearly as I can translate the Word, signifies the Island of *Sorcerers* or *Magicians*. It is, in Extent, about one Third of the Isle of *Wight*, and very fruitful. It is governed by the Head of a particular Tribe, who are all Magicians. This Tribe marries only among each other, and the eldest in Succession is Prince or Governor, who hath a magnificent Palace, and a Park of three thousand Acres, surrounded by a Wall of hewn Stone, twenty Feet high, in which are smaller Inclosures for Cattle, Corn, and Gardening. The Prince and his Family are attended by Domesticks of an extraordinary Kind; for, by his Skill in Necromancy, he can call whom he pleaseth from the Dead, and command their Service for twenty four Hours, but no longer; nor can he raise the same Persons again, in less than three Months, unless upon very unusual Occasions. Arriving at the Island, about Eleven in the Morning, one of my Companions waited on the Governor, to desire Admittance for a Stranger, who came on Purpose to have the Honour of attending on his Highness. This being granted, we all three enter'd the Palace-Gate, between two
Ranks

Ranks of Guards, arm'd and dress'd after an antick Manner, whose very Countenances made my Flesh creep with an inexpressible Horror. Having pass'd thro' several Apartments between Servants of the same Sort, placed in Rows, as before, we at last came to the Presence-Chamber, where, after three profound Obeysances, and some general Questions, we were allowed to sit on three Stools near the lowest Step of the Governor's Throne. His Highness understood the Language of *Balnibarbi*, tho' it differs from that of *Glubbdubdrib*, and desired me to give him an Account of my Travels; and, to convince me that I should be treated without Ceremony, he dismiss'd his whole Retinue with a Turn of his Finger, at which, to my Amazement, they vanished in an Instant, like Visions in a Dream, when we awake on a sudden. It was some Time before I could recover my Spirits; but when the Prince assured me that I was in no Danger, and I observed my Companions, who had often been entertained in the like Manner, not in the least concerned, I took a little Courage, and related to his Highness a brief History of my various Adventures, tho' not without some Hesi-

Hesitation, and frequently turning my Eyes to the Place where I had seen the domestick Spectres. I, after this, had the Honour to dine with the Governor, where another Sett of Ghosts served up the Meat, and waited at Table; and found my self to be less terrified now, than I was in the Morning. I staid until Sun-set, but humbly intreated the Governor to excuse my not accepting of his Invitation of lodging in the Palace. My two Friends and I lay at a private House in the Town adjacent, which is the Metropolis of this little Island; and, the next Morning, pursuant to the Prince's Command, we returned to pay him our Duty.

Thus, we continued in the Island for ten Days, the greatest Part of every Day with the Governor, and at Night in our Lodging. I soon became familiar to the Sight of Apparitions; so that, after three or four Times, they did not give me any Emotion at all; or if I had some Apprehensions still remaining, my Curiosity over-ruled them: For the Governor ordered me to call up whatever Persons or Numbers among all the Dead, from the Beginning of the World unto the present Time, I should think fit to
name,

name, and command them to answer whatever Questions I would ask them; provided my Questions were limited within the Compass of the Times they lived in: And he said I might entirely depend upon their Veracity, for that Lying was a Talent of no Service in the lower World. I made my humblest Acknowledgements to the Governor for so remarkable a Favour. We were in an Apartment, from whence there was a fine Prospect into the Park; and, being first inclin'd to be amus'd with Scenes of Pomp and Magnificence, I desired to see *Alexander the Great*, at the Head of his Army, just after the Battle of *Arbela*; which upon a Motion of his Highness's Finger instantly appeared in a Field under the Window, where we stood. *Alexander* was called up in the Chamber: It was not without much Difficulty that I understood his *Greek*, and had but a little of my own. He assured me, upon his Honour, that he was not poisoned, but died of a Fever by hard Drinking. Next I beheld *Hannibal* passing the *Alps*, who told me he had not so much as a Drop of Vinegar in his Camp. *Cesar* and *Pompey* appeared to my View at the Head of their Troops

pre-

prepared for an Engagement; and I saw the former in his last great Triumph. I desired to see the *Roman* Senate in one large Chamber, and an Assembly of a more modern Date in another. The first seemed to be composed of Heroes and Demi-Gods; but the other of Pedlars, Pick-pockets, Robbers, and Bullies. The Governor, at my Request, ordered *Cesar* and *Brutus* to move towards us. The Sight of *Brutus* struck me with a profound Admiration, and I at once discovered the most consummate Vertue, Intrepidity, and Steadiness of Mind, the truest Love of his Country, and Benevolence to all Mankind, in every Feature of his Countenance. I, with no small Pleasure observed, that those two Persons kept a good Understanding with each other, and *Cesar* freely own'd to me, that the most illustrious Actions of his Life were vastly inferior to the Glory of taking it away. *Brutus* very often honoured me with his Company; and he told me, that his Ancestors *Junius*, *Socrates*, *Epaminondas*, *Cato* Junior, *Sir Thomas More*, and himself were always together: A Setemvirate to which no Age of the World can add a Seventh. It would be tedious to relate what

what a vast Multitude of great Men were called up, to gratify my Desire of seeing the World in every Period of Antiquity in one View: But I had an inexpressible Satisfaction in beholding the Destroyers of Tyrants and Usurpers, and the Restorers of Liberty to oppressed Nations.





CHAP. VIII.

A more particular Account of Glubbdubdrib. Antient and Modern History corrected.

HAVING an Inclination to see those Ancients, who were most famous for Wit and Learning, I desired that *Homer* and *Aristotle* might appear at the Head of all their Commentators; but those were so numerous, that some Hundreds were obliged to wait in the Court and outward Apartments of the Palace. I knew those two Heroes, at first View, and could distinguish them not only from the Crowd, but from each other. *Homer* was the taller and more comely Person of the two, walk'd very erect, considering his Years, and I never saw any Eyes more quick and piercing than his. *Aristotle* stooped much, and carried a Staff in his Hand; having a meagre Complexion, lank and thin Hair, and an hollow

hollow Voice. They were both perfect Strangers to the rest of the Company, and I was informed in Whisper by a Ghost, that these Commentators kept at the greatest Distance from their Principals in the lower World, because they were conscious of Shame and Guilt, in basely misinterpreting the Sense of those Authors. I introduced *Didymus* and *Eustathius* to *Homer*, who, on my Account, used them better than they deserved, for he soon discover'd their Want of Genius to enter into the Spirit of a Poet. But *Aristotle* could not bear the Sight of *Scotus* and *Ramus*, being out of all Patience when I gave him their Character; and he ask'd them, whether the rest of their Tribe were as great Dunces as themselves. I then desired, that *Descartes* and *Gassendi* might be called up, whom I perswaded to explain their Systems to *Aristotle*. This renowned Philosopher ingeniously confess'd his own Errors in Natural Philosophy, because he proceeded in many Cases upon Conjecture, as all Men must do; and finding that *Gassendi*, who had labour'd with all Skill to recommend the Doctrine of *Epicurus*, and the *Vortices* of *Descartes*, were both of them exploded, he predicted the same Fate to *Attraction*, which is so much in Vogue at present. He said, that Systems of Nature were like Fashions, which would vary in every Age; and that even those who pretended to demonstrate them from Mathematical

Principles, would flourish but for a short time. I employed five Days in Conversation with others of the ancient Learned, and beheld most of the first *Roman* Emperors. *Helio-gabalus's* Cooks were called up to dress a Dinner, but for want of Materials, they did not shew much of their Skill. An *Helot* of *Agésilas* prepar'd us a Dish of *Spartan* Broth, but I could not sup a second Spoonful. My Companions were obliged to return in three Days, which I spent in taking a View of the modern Dead, who had made the greatest Figure in *England*, and other Countries of *Europe*; and having always admired old illustrious Families, I desired the Prince would call up a Dozen or two of Kings with their Ancestors in Order, for eight or nine Generations. But my Disappointment was great and unexpected; for, instead of a numerous Train of crowned Heads, I saw in one Family two Fiddlers, three brisk Courtiers, and an *Italian* Pr. late; in another, a Barber, an Abbot, and two Cardinals. I have too much Reverence for Monarchs to dwell any longer on so nice a Point; but as to Counts, Marquesses, Dukes, Earls, &c. I was not so scrupulous. I confess, I had some Pleasure, in finding my self able to trace the Lineaments by which certain Families are distinguished, up to their Originals. I could evidently discover, whence one Family derives a long Chin, and a second hath been stock'd with

Knaves

Knives for two Generations; why a third was crack-brain'd, and a fourth Sharper; whence happen'd what *Polydore Virgil* says of a certain great House, *Nec vir fortis, nec fœmina casta*; how some Families are distinguish'd by Cruelty, Falshood, and Cowardise, as by their Coat of Arms; who first brought the Pox into a noble House, which hath lineally descended to their Posterity. All which I could easily account for, when I saw such an Interruption of Lineages, by Pages, Lacquies, Valets, Coachmen, Gamblers, Captains, and Pick-pockets. I was chiefly offended at Modern History: For having examined all the Persons most famous in the Courts of Princes, for an Hundred Years past, I found how the World had been misled by disingenuous Writers, to ascribe the bravest Actions in War to Cowards, the sagest Counsel to Fools, Integrity to Parasites, *Roman* Virtue to Villains, Piety to Atheists, Charity to Sodomites, Veracity to Informers; how many innocent and deserving Persons had been condemned to Death or Banishment, by Influence of great Ministers upon the Corruption of Judges, and the Malice of Faction; how many Knives had been advanced to the highest Offices of Trust, Power, Dignity, and Profit; how great share in the Motions of Courts, Councils, and Senates, might be claim'd by Bawds, Whores, Pimps, Flatterers, and Buffoons; how mean an Opinion I had of human Wisdom and Sincerity, when I was let into the true Springs and Motives of great

Enterprizes and Revolutions, and of the trifling Accidents to which they owed their Success. Here I found out the Roguery and Ignorance of the Writers of *Anecdotes*, or Secret History, who send so many Princes to their Graves with a Draught of Poyson; will relate the Dialogue between a King and his first Minister, where no Witness was by; unlock the Thoughts and Cabinets of Ambassadors and Secretaries of State, and always have the Misfortune of being mistaken. Here I discover'd the secret Causes of many great and surprizing Events; how a Whore can govern the Back-stairs, the Back-stairs a Council, and the Council a Senate. A General told us himself, that he got a Victory, merely by the Dint of Cowardise and ill Conduct: And an Admiral, that for want of Intelligence, he conquer'd the Enemy, to whom he design'd to betray the Fleet. Three Kings assured me, that, in their whole Reigns, they did never prefer any Person of Merit, unless by Mistake or Treachery: Neither would they do it, if they were to live again; and they prov'd with great Force of Reason, that the royal Throne could not be supported without Corruption, because that positive, restive Temper, which Virtue infused into Man, was a constant Clogg to publick Business. I enquir'd particularly, how many had procur'd to themselves high Titles of Honour, and vast Estates; and I confin'd my Enqui-

Enquiry to a very modern Period ; however, without grating upon present Times, because I would by no means give Offence, even to Foreigners (for I hope it need not be told, that I do not, in the least, intend my native Country in what I abhor on this Occasion) a great Number of Persons concern'd were call'd up, and, upon a very slight Examination laid open such a Scene of Infamy, that I cannot reflect upon it without Seriousness. Perjury, Oppression, Subornation, Fraud, Pandarism, and the like *Infirmities*, were some of the most excusable they had to mention, for which, as it were reasonable, I gave great Allowance. But when some declared that they ow'd their Honours and Riches to Sodomy or Incests ; others to the Prostitution of their Wives and Daughters ; some to the betraying their Prince or Country ; others to poisoning, and more to the perverting of Justice, to destroy the Innocent : I hope I may be pardon'd, if I abate a little of that profound Respect I am naturally inclin'd to bear to Persons of Rank and Dignity. Having often read of great Services done to Princes and States, I desired a Sight of the Persons by whom they were performed. Upon Enquiry, I was inform'd that their Names were not to be found in Records, except a few whom History hath set forth to be the basest Rogues and Traitors ; but, as to the rest, I had never, so much as once, heard of them. They all appear'd with dejected Looks,

E 3

and

and in a very mean Habit, most of them having died in Poverty and Disgrace, and the rest on a Scaffold or a Gibbet. There was, among the rest, one Person, whose Case seem'd to be somewhat extraordinary. A Youth, about Eighteen Years old, stood by his Side. He said he had, for many Years, the Command of a Ship, and, in the Sea-fight at *Actium*, had the Fortune to break the Enemy's great Line of Battle, sink three of their best Ships, and take a fourth, which was the sole Cause of *Anthony's* Flight, and of the following Victory. He farther told me, that, this War being ended, he went to *Rome*, and solicited at the Court of *Augustus*, to be preferred to a larger Ship, whose Commander had been kill'd; but, without any Regard to his Merit, it was dispos'd of to a Youth, that had never been at Sea, the Son of *Libertina*, who waited on one of the Emperor's Mistresses. Returning back to his own Vessel, he was charged with Neglect of Duty, and the Ship given to a Page of *Publicola* the Vice-admiral; upon which he retired to a poor Farm, at a great Distance from *Rome*, and there ended his Days. Being curious to know the Truth of this Story, I desired *Agrippa* might be call'd up, who was Admiral in that Fight; who confirm'd the whole Account, but with much more Advantage to the Captain, whose Modesty had lessen'd or conceal'd a great Part of his Merit. I was astonish'd to find Corruption
grown

grown to such a Height, in that Empire, by the force of Luxury so lately introduced; which made me less admire at many parallel Cases in other Countries, where all sorts of Vices have prevail'd so much longer, and where the whole Praise as well as Pillage hath been engross'd by the chief Commander, who, perhaps had the least Right to either. As every Person call'd up, appear'd exactly, in the same manner, he had done in the World, it gave me melancholly Reflections, to observe, how much the Race of Mankind had degenerated among us, for these Hundred Years past: How the Pox had alter'd every Feature of an *English* Countenance, contracted the Size of Bodies, unbraced the Nerves, relaxed the Sinews and Muscles, introduced a fallow Visage, and rendered the Flesh loose and rancid. I desir'd at length, that some *English* Yoemen of the old Stamp might be call'd up, who, were once so famous for the Simplicity of their Manners, Diet, and Habit, for Justice in all their Dealings, for their Spirit of Liberty, for their Courage, and Love of their Country. Nor could I be altogether unconcerned, upon comparing the Living, with the Dead, to find how all these pure Native Virtues were prostituted by their Grand-Children, who, by selling their Votes, and managing at Elections, have acquir'd every Vice and Corruption that can possibly be learned in a Court.

CHAP. IX.

The Author's Return to Maldonada. He sails to the Kingdom of Luggnagg. Is confin'd. Is sent to Court. The Manner of his Admittance. The King's great Clemency to his Subjects.



THE Day of our Departure being come, I took Leave of the Governour of *Glubbubdrib*, and we returned to *Maldonada*, where, after a Fortnight's Waiting, a Ship was ready to sail to *Luggnagg*. My two Companions, and some others, were so kind as to supply me with Provisions, and see me on board. I was a Month in this Voyage. We had one violent Storm, which obliged us to steer Westward, to get into the Trade Wind, which holds for above sixty Leagues. On the 21st of *April 1711*, we sailed in the River *Clumeg-nig*, a Sea-port Town at the South-East Point of *Luggnagg*, and cast Anchor within a League of the Town, making a Signal for a Pilot. Two of them came on board, in less than Half an Hour, who guided us between some very dangerous Shoals and Rocks, in a Passage to a large Basin, where a Fleet may ride in Safety within a Cable's Length of the Town Wall. Some of the Sailors had told

the Pilots, that I was a Stranger, and a great Traveller, who gave Notice of it to a Custom-house Officer, by whom I was examined very strictly upon my Landing. This Officer spoke to me in the Language of *Balnibarbi*; which, by reason of much Commerce, is understood in that Town, especially by Seamen, and those concerned in the Customs. I gave him a short Account of my Story, and made it as plausible and consistent as I could; but I thought advisable to call myself an *Hollander*, because I intended for *Japan*, and the *Dutch* were the only *Europeans* allow'd to enter into that Kingdom. I therefore told the Officer, that having been shipwreck'd on the Coast of *Balnibarbi*, I was received up into *Laputa*, or the Flying Island, (which he had often heard of) and was now in my Way to *Japan*, from whence I might find an Opportunity of returning to my own Country. The Officer said, I must be confin'd till he could receive Orders from Court, for which he would write immediately, and hoped to have an Answer in a Fortnight. I was conducted to a commodious Lodging, with a Centry placed at the Door; tho' I had the Liberty of a large Garden, and was used with Humanity, being maintain'd all the Time at the King's Charge. I had Invitations from several Persons, chiefly out of Curiosity, because it was reported, that I came from Countries very remote, of which they

never heard. I hir'd a Youth, who came in the same Ship with me to be my Interpreter; he was born at *Luggnagg*, but had lived some time at *Maldonada*, and was a compleat Master of both Languages. By his Assistance, I could hold a Conversation with those that made me Visits; but this consisted only of their Questions and my Answers. The Dispatch came from Court at the Time we expected, and contained a Warrant for bringing me and my Retinue to *Traldragdabb*, or *Trildrogdrib*, by a Party of Ten Horse. My whole Retinue was that poor Lad for an Interpreter, and, at my Request, we had each of us a Mule to ride on. A Messenger was dispatch'd before us, to give the King Notice of my coming, and to desire that he would appoint a Day and Hour, when it would be his Royal Pleasure, that I might be admitted to *lick the Dust before his Foot-stool*. This Court Style I found to be more than a Matter of Form; for, upon my Admittance, I was commanded to crawl on my Belly, and lick the Floor as I advanced; but, because I was a Stranger, it was swept so clean, that the Dust did not offend me. This was a peculiar Favour, not allowed to any but Persons of the first Rank. Nay, sometimes the Floor is strew'd with Dust on purpose, if the Person to be admitted has powerful Enemies at Court; and I have seen a great Lord with his Mouth so cramm'd, that when he crept to the pro-

per Distance from the Throne, he could not speak a Word. Nor is there any Remedy, it being capital for those who receive an Audience to spit, or wipe their Mouths before his Majesty. There is, indeed, another Custom, which I cannot entirely approve of, when the King is inclin'd to put any of his Nobles to Death in a gentle Manner, the Floor is strew'd with brown Powder, of a deadly Composition, which, being lick'd up, infallibly kills him in Twenty four Hours. But, in Justice to this Prince's Clemency, (wherein it cou'd be wish'd the Monarchs of *Europe* would imitate him) it must be mention'd, that strict Orders are given to have the infected Parts of the Floor well wash'd, after every such Execution; which, if his Servants neglect, they incur his royal Displeasure. In my Hearing, he ordered one of his Pages to be whipt, for maliciously omitting his Duty in this Particular; by which Neglect, a young Lord, of great Hopes, coming to an Audience, was poison'd, altho' the King had then no Design against his Life. But this Prince was so good, as to forgive the Page his Whipping, upon Promise of doing so no more, without especial Orders. But to return from this Digression; when I crept within four Yards of the Throne, I raised my self gently upon my Knees; and then, striking my Forehead seven times upon the Ground, I pronounced the following Words,

Words, as they had been taught me; *Ickpling Glaffibnobb Squutserumm blbiop Mlashnalt, Zwin tnodbalkguffb Slbiophad Gurdlobb Asbt.* This Compliment is appointed by the Laws of the Land to be used by all Persons admitted to the King's Presence. It may be translated thus: *May your celestial Majesty outlive the Sun eleven Moons and a Half.* To this the King returned an Answer, to which I replied, as I had been instructed; *Fluft drin Yalerick Dwaldom prastrad mirpush;* which properly signifies, *My Tongue is in the Mouth of my Friend*, i.e. an Interpreter; upon which my young Man was introduced, by whose Help I answer'd as many Questions as the Prince could propose in more than an Hour. What I spoke in the *Balnibarbian* Tongue, my Interpreter explained in that of *Luggnagg*. The King being highly pleased with my Company, ordered his *Bliffmarklub*, or High-Chamberlain, to appoint a Lodging in the Court for me and my Interpreter, with a daily Allowance for my Board, and a large Purse of Gold for my other Expences. I stayed here three Months out of Obedience to the King, who made me several very great Offers: But I thought it more agreeable to Prudence and Justice, that I should spend the Remainder of my Days with my own Family.

CHAP.

C H A P. X.

The Luggnuggians commended. A particular Description of the Struldbruggs; with many Conversations between the Author and some eminent Persons concerning them.

THE Luggnuggians are polite and generous; and altho' they be not without a Tincture of *Eastern Pride*, yet they are courteous to Strangers, especially such as are countenanced by the Court. I was acquainted with many of them of the best Fashion, and by means of my Interpreter, our Conversation was pleasant. One Day in Company, I was asked by a Person of Quality, whether I had seen any of their *Struldbruggs*, or Immortals? I answer'd not, and intreated him to explain to me what they were. He told me, that sometimes, tho' very seldom, a Child was born in a Family with a red circular Spot in the Forehead, directly over the left Eye-brow, which was a sure Sign of its Immortality. The Spot he described to be about the Compass of a silver Three-pence, which in time grew larger, and changed its Colour; for, at Twelve Years of Age, it became green, but at Five and Twenty a deep Blue, and at Five and Forty it turned to a Coal black, and as large
as

as an *English* Shilling, never admitting any farther Alteration. He said these Births were so rare, that there were not above Eleven Hundred *Struldbruggs* of both Sexes in the Kingdom, of which about Fifty lived in the Metropolis, and among the rest, a Girl born about three Years ago: That those Births were the mere Effects of Chance, and the Children of the *Struldbruggs* were equally mortal with those of others. This Account, I must confess, struck me with inexpressible Transport; and the Relater understanding the *Balnibarbian* Language, I broke out in Expressions, perhaps, too extravagant. I cry'd out in a rapturous manner, Happy Nation! where every Child hath, at least, a Chance for Immortality! Happy People! who have so many living Patterns of ancient Virtue, and Masters to teach them the Wisdom of all former Ages! But infinitely happy are those *Struldbruggs*! who have their Minds free and undisturb'd, without any of those Fears and Depressions caused by the constant Apprehension of Death. I expressed my Admiration, that I had not seen any of these excellent Persons at Court, the black Spot on their Forehead being so remarkable, that I could not have easily overlook'd it; and it was impossible so judicious a Prince as his Majesty should be without such wise Counsellors. Yet perhaps the Virtue of those Sages was too rigid for the Libertine Manners

ners of a Court; and we often find, that young Men are too volatile, to be guided by the prudent Dictates of their Seniors. However, since the King was pleased to allow me Access to his Royal Person, I was determin'd, upon the next Opportunity, to deliver my Sentiments to him freely, and at large, by the Help of my Interpreter; and whether he would fall in with my Advice, or no, I was resolv'd to accept with Thankfulness the kind Offer his Majesty had made me, of an Establishment in this Country, that I might spend my Life in the Company of those illustrious *Struldbruggs*, if they would please to admit me. The Gentleman to whom I address'd my Discourse, said to me with a sort of Smile, that he was glad of any Occasion to keep me among them, and desir'd he might explain to the Company what I had spoke. He did so, and they discours'd together for some time in their own Language; but I understood not a Syllable of what they said, nor could I learn from their Looks, how my Discourse had affected them. After a short Silence, the same Person told me, that his Friends and mine (for so he call'd the Company) were exceedingly pleas'd with my Remarks on the Happiness and Advantages of immortal Life, and were desirous to be particularly inform'd what Scheme of Living I should have propos'd to myself, had I been born a *Struldbrugg*. I replied, it was easy to
be

be eloquent on so fruitful and pleasant a Subject, especially to me, who had often amus'd my self with Visions of what I should do, were I a great Man; and had often run over the Method of Life I should chuse, were I sure to live for ever. Had I been born a *Struldbrugg*, as soon as I could discover my own Happiness, I would make use of all Arts and Means whatsoever to be rich. In the Pursuit of this Design, by good Management I might expect, in Two Hundred Years, to be the wealthiest Man in the Kingdom; then I would, from my earliest Youth, set myself to the Study of Arts and Sciences, and so, in time, excel all others in Learning. Lastly, I would exactly set down every remarkable Action and Event that happened in the Publick, impartially draw the Characters of the several Successions of Princes, and the chief Ministers of State, with my own Remarks on each Point. I would carefully record the various Changes in Customs, Languages, Habit, Diet and Diversions; by all which Acquirements, I should become the Oracle of the Nation. I would never marry after Sixty, but live in an hospitable manner, yet still within due Bounds. I would entertain myself in giving Instructions to hopeful young Men, by proving, from my own Remembrance, Experience and Observation, enforced by many Examples, the Usefulness of Virtue in publick and private Life: But,
for,

for my intimate and constant Companions, I would chuse a Dozen from the most ancient down to my Contemporaries, of my own immortal Fraternity. If any of these were indigent, I would furnish them with commodious Lodges round my own Estate, and have some of them daily at my Table, only mingling a few of the most deserving among you Mortals, whom Length of Time would teach me to lose with little or no Regret, and treat your Posterity after the same manner, just as a Man diverts himself with the annual Succession of Pinks and Tulips in his Garden, regardless that he has lost those which withered the preceding Year. These *Struldbruggs* and I would impart to each other our Observations and Memorials thro' the Course of Time, take Notice of the several Steps by which Corruption steals into the World, and oppose it in every Gradation, by perpetually warning and instructing Mankind; which, fortified by our own Example, might prevent that Degeneracy of human Nature so justly lamented in all Ages. To all this might be added the Pleasure of beholding the various Revolutions of States and Empires, the Changes in the lower and upper World, ancient Cities buried in Ruines, and small Villages become the Seats of Monarchs; deep Rivers lessening into shallow Brooks; the Sea leaving one Coast dry, and overwhelming another; the Discovery of Countries

tries not yet known; Barbarity spreading over the politest Nations, and the most barbarous becoming civiliz'd. I should then observe the Discovery of the *Longitude*, *Perpetual Motion*, *Universal Medicine*, and many others, brought to the greatest Perfection. We should likewise make wonderful Discoveries in Astronomy, by outliving and confirming our own Predictions, by discerning the Progress and Returns of Comets, with the Changes of the Sun, Moon, and Stars. I discoursed upon many other Topicks, which my Love of Immortality and earthly Happiness naturally supplied me with. When I had done, the Company conferred together in their own Language, laughing at my Expence. At length, the Gentleman abovemention'd told me, that he was desired by the rest to correct a few Mistakes I had fallen into thro' the Weakness of human Nature, that there were no *Struldbruggs* any where but in this Country; for he found, when he was Ambassador to *Balnibarbi* and *Japan*, that the Natives look'd upon his Account of them as incredible as I did my self, upon the first Mention of it; that he observed in both those Places Long Life to be the universal Desire of Mankind; that they, who had one Foot in the Grave, were sure, as strongly as was possible, to hold back the other; that the eldest regarded Death as the greatest Evil; but in *Luggnagg* the Appetite of Living was not
so

So eager from the Example of the *Struldbruggs*, which they had daily in their View. He told me, that my Scheme of Living was irrational, because it supposed a perpetual Continuance of Youth, Health, and Vigour, which none could be so vain as to expect; that the Question ought to be thus stated, Whether, and how a Man would chuse to live for ever, under all the Disadvantages that usually attend Old Age? For altho' few would desire Immortality on those hard Conditions, yet in *Balnibarbi* and *Japan*, every Man would fain put off Death for some Time longer, let it approach ever so late; and I seldom heard of any one that died willingly, unless he labour'd under extreme Grief and Torture. And he appeal'd to me, whether, in the Course of my Travels, I had not observ'd the same general Disposition. As for the *Struldbruggs*, he said they usually acted like Mortals, until they were Thirty Years of Age, and then by Degrees, they grew melancholy and dejected, until they come to Eighty. This he learnt from their own Confession; for otherwise there being not above Two or Three of them born in an Age, it was impossible to form a general Observation. When they arrive at Eighty Years, the utmost Period of Living in this Country, besides the common Infirmities of other Men, they have many more arising from the dismal Prospect of never dying. They were not only opinionative, peevish,

peevish, covetous, surly, vain, talkative, but incapable of Friendship, and dead to all natural Affection, which never descended below their Grandchildren. Envy and impatient Inclinations are their prevailing Passions. Their Envy is chiefly directed to the Vices of the Young, and the Deaths of the Old. By reflecting on the former, they find themselves cut off from the very Possibility of Pleasure; and, as often as they see a Funeral, they repine that others are gone to an Harbour of Rest, to which they must never arrive. They Remember nothing but what happen'd in their Youth and middle Age, and that very imperfectly; and for the Truth or Particulars of any Fact, it is safer to depend on common Tradition, than their best Recollections. The least miserable among them seem to be those who turn to Dotage; these meet with more Pity and Relief, because they want many ill Qualities that prevail in others. If a *Struldbrugg* marry one of his own Species, the Marriage is dissolv'd on Course, as soon as the younger of the Parties comes to be Eighty; for the Law thinks it reasonable that those, who are condemned without any Fault of their own, to live forever in the World, should not have their Misery doubled by the Incumbrance of a Wife. When they have compleated their eightieth Year, they are look'd upon as dead in Law, their Heirs succeeding to their Estates: only

a small

A small Pittance is reserv'd for their Maintenance, and the poor ones are supported, by the Publick. After that Term of Years, they are held incapable of any Office of Trust or Profit, they cannot purchase Lands nor take Leases, neither can they be Witnesses in any Cause, no not even for the Decision of Meers and Bounds. At Ninety, they lose their Teeth and Hair; and, having no Taste, they can neither eat nor drink with Relish or Appetite, their Diseases still continuing without encreasing or diminishing. In Discourse, they forget the common Apellations of Things and the Names of Persons, even those of their nearest Friends and Relations. On the same account, they cannot amuse themselves with Reading, because their Memory will not carry them from the Beginning of a Sentence to the End, tho' this be the only Entertainment whereof they might, otherwise, be capable. The Language of this Country being in a perpetual Flux, the *Struldbruggs* of one Age, do not understand these of another, nor can they, in two Hundred Years Time, converse at all, unless by a few general Words, with their Neighbours the Mortals, and so they live like foreigners in their native Country. I afterwards saw five or six *Struldbruggs* of different Ages, the youngest about two Hundred Years Old; but altho' they were inform'd, that I was a great Traveller, they were not so curious as to ask me a Question; only desired I would

would give them some *Slumskudask*, or a Token of Remembrance, another Word for begging, to evade the Law that strictly forbids it, because they have an Allowance, tho' a very scanty one, from the Publick. They are despis'd and hated by all People; when one of them is born, it's esteemed Ominous; and their Birth is so particularly recorded, that you may know their Age by consulting the Registry, which hath not been kept above a Hundred Years, or at least hath been destroy'd by Time or publick Commotions. But the common way of computing their Age is, by asking them what Kings or great Persons they can remember, and then consulting History; for, to be sure, the last Prince in their Mind did not enter upon his Reign, after they were eighty. They were the most mortifying Sight I ever saw, and the Women more horrible than the Men. Besides the usual Deformities in extream Old-age, they acquir'd a peculiar inexpressible Ghastliness, in proportion to their Years; and, among half a dozen, I could easily discover the eldest, altho' there was not above a Century or two between them. My Reader, by this time, will conclude, that my Appetite for Immortality was much abated. I grew not a little ashamed of the pleasing Visions I had indulged, and could chuse the most torturing Death rather than the Life of a *Struldbrugg*. The King hearing of what pass'd on this Occasion, ralli

ed me very pleasantly, and wish'd I would send a Couple of those People to *England*, to fortify my Country-men against the Fear of Death; but, this is forbidden by the fundamental Laws of the Country, or else I should have sent them. I could not but think that the Laws of this Kingdom, concerning the *Struldbruggs*, were highly reasonable; for as Avarice is the necessary Attendant of Old-age, they must, otherwise, in time become Proprietors of the whole Nation, and engross the Civil Power, which must end in the Ruin of the Publick.



C H A P. XI.

The Author, leaving of Luggnagg, sails to Japan. From Japan, he returns in a Dutch Ship to Amsterdam, and thence to England.

I Thought this Account of the *Struldbruggs* might be somewhat entertaining, because it seems a little extraordinary; at least I cannot recollect that I have seen the like in any Book of Travels that hath come in my way: And if I am mistaken, my Apology must be, that it's necessary for Travellers, who describe the same Country, very frequently to insist on the same Particulars, without incurring the Censure of having borrow'd or transcribed from other Writers. As there is a constant Commerce between this Kingdom and that of *Japan*, it is not improbable that the *Japanese* may have given some Account of the *Struldbruggs*; but staying only a short Time in *Japan*, and being an entire Stranger to their Language, I could not make any Enquiries. However, I hope the *Dutch*, on this Hint, will be curious and able enough to supply my Defects. The Prince having often made me considerable Offers, and finding me fully determin'd to return to my own Country, was pleased to give me his Licence to depart, with a Letter

in

in my Favour, under his own Hand, to the Emperor of *Japan*. He likewise made me a Present of Four Hundred and Forty Four large Pieces of Gold (this Nation being very fond of even Numbers) and a red Diamond, which I sold in *England* for above Eleven Hundred Pounds. On the 6th of *May* 1709, I took Leave of his Majesty and all my Friends. The King ordered a Guard to conduct me to *Glanguenstald*, a Royal Port, to the Southwest Part of the Island. In six Days, a Vessel was ready to carry me to *Japan*, and I spent Fifteen Days in the Voyage. We landed at *Xamoschi*, a Port-Town on the *South-East* Part of *Japan*; the Town lyes on the Western Point, where there is a narrow Streight, leading Northward into a long Arm of the Ocean, upon the North-East Part of which, *Yedo*, the Metropolis, stands. When I landed, I shewed the Custom-house Officers my Letter from the King of *Luggnagg* to the Emperor. They knew the Seal, which was as broad as the Palm of my Hand. The Impression was, *A King lifting up a lame Beggar from the Earth*. The Magistrates of the Town received me as a publick Minister, provided me with Carriages and Servants, and bore my Charges to *Yedo*, where being admitted to an Audience, deliver'd my Letter, which was explained to the Emperor by an Interpreter, who directed me, by the Prince's Order, to signify

F my

my Request, and whatever it was, it should be granted for the sake of the King of *Luggnagg*. This Interpreter was employ'd to transact Affairs with the *Hollanders*; he soon guess'd by my Aspect, that I was an *European*, and therefore repeated his Majesty's Command in *Low Dutch*. I answer'd, that I was a *Dutch Merchant*, shipwreck'd in a very remote Country, from whence I travelled to *Luggnagg*, and then to *Japan*, where I understood my Countrymen often traded, hoping to get an Opportunity of returning into *Europe*. I therefore intreated his royal Favour, that I might be safely conducted to *Nangasac*; and that, for the sake of my Patron, he would excuse the Ceremony of *Trampling upon the Crucifix*, because I had been driven into his Kingdom by Misfortunes, without any Design of Trading. When this latter Petition was interpreted to his Majesty, he, in a little Surprize, said, he believed I was the first *Dutchman* that ever made a Scruple in this Point, and that he questioned whether I was an *Hollander* or no, but rather suspected me to be a *Christian*. However, for the Reasons I had offer'd, but chiefly to gratify the King of *Luggnagg*, he consented to grant me this singular Mark of his Favour; but the Matter must be managed with Caution, and his Officers commanded to let me pass, as it were by Forgetfulness; for he assured me, that if this Secret should be known by my Countrymen,

men, the *Dutch*, they would cut my Throat in the Voyage. Having returned my Thanks for this extraordinary Favour, some Troops being then on their March to *Nangasac*, the commanding Officer had Orders to conduct me thither, with special Instructions about the Ceremony of the *Crucifix*. On the 9th of June 1709, I arrived at *Nangasac*, after a fatiguing Journey, and soon became acquainted with some *Dutch* Sailors belonging to the *Amboyna* of *Amsterdam*, a Ship of 450 Tons. Having lived long at *Leyden*, pursuing my studies, I spoke *Dutch* well. The Seamen at once knew from whence I came last, and were inquisitive about my Travels and Course of Life. I told them a Story as brief and plausible as I could, concealing the greatest part. As I knew many Persons in *Holland*, it was easy for me to invent Names for my parents, whom I represented to be obscure people in the Province of *Gelderland*. I would have given the Captain, *Theodorus Van* *rust*, what he pleased to demand for my voyage; but finding I was a Surgeon, he was willing to take half the usual Rate, provided I would serve him in that Capacity. Before we went on board, some of the Crew then ask'd me, whether I had complied with the Ceremony above-mention'd. I evaded the Question, by telling them in general terms, that I had given Satisfaction to the Emperor and Court in all Particulars. How-

ever, a Rogue of a Skipper inform'd an Officer, that I had not yet *Trampled on the Crucifix*; but the other having received Orders to let me pass, gave the Rascal twenty Strokes on the Shoulders with a Bamboo, which put a Stop to all such Enquiries. Nothing remarkable happened in this Voyage; we sail'd with a fair Wind to *The Cape of Good Hope*, where we took in fresh Water. On the 16th of *April*, we arrived at *Amsterdam* having lost only four Men in the Voyage. From *Amsterdam* I soon after set Sail for *England*, and on the 10th of *April* we put in at the *Downs*. I landed next Morning, after I had been absent from my native Country five Years and six Months compleat. I set out immediately for *Rotherhithe*, where I arriv'd at Two in the Afternoon, and found my Wife and Children in good Health.





TRAVELS.

PART IV.

A Voyage to the Country of the HOUYHNHNMS.

CHAP. I.

The Author goes as Captain of a Ship. His Men mutiny, and confine him to his Cabin, and set him on shore in an unknown Land. He travels up the Country. The Yahoo's, a strange Sort of Animal describ'd. The Author meets two Houyhnhnms.



Continued at Home in a happy Condition with my Wife and Family, for the Space of five Months, had I known when I was well. But having an advantageous Offer, of being Captain of the *Adventure*, a Merchant-man of 350 Tons, I accepted of it: For I understood Navigation; and being

F 3

weary

weary of a Surgeon's Employment at Sea, I took a skilful young Man in that Calling into my Ship. We sailed from *Portsmouth* on the 2d of *August* 1710, and met Capt. *Pocock* of *Bristol*, at *Teneriff*, who was going to the *Bay of Campechy*. On the 16th, a Storm parted us, and I heard since, that his Ship was lost by his own Obstinacy, and none escaped but one Cabbin-Boy. I had several Men died in my Ship of Calentures, so that I was obliged to recruit at *Berbadoes* and the *Leeward Islands*, where I was ordered to touch, but had Reason to repent, for I found that most of them had been *Buccaneers*. I had fifty Hands on board, and had Orders to trade with the *Indians* in the *South-sea*, and make what Discoveries I could. These Rogues I had pick'd up corrupted my other Men and conspired together to seize the Ship which they executed one Morning, and bound me Hand and Foot, with Threats of throwing me over-board, if I offered to stir. They forced me to swear Submission to them, and then left me fasten'd only by one Leg with a Chain, and a Centinel at my Door with his Piece charged, who was commanded to shoot me, if I attempted my Liberty. They sent me down Victuals and Drink, and took the Government of the Ship upon themselves but could not turn Pyrates, as they design'd without more Hands. They sold the Goods of the Ship, and having lost many of the Crew

refo

resolved to go to *Madagastar* for Recruits. They sailed many Weeks, but what Course they took, I know not, being all that time under Confinement. On the 9th Day of *May* 1711, one *James Welch* came and told me, he had Orders to set me on Shore. I expostulated with him, but in vain, neither would he tell me who was their new Captain. They forced me into the Long-Boat, letting me take my best Cloaths, a Bundle of Linnen, but no Arms except my Hanger, and indeed were so civil, as not to search my Pockets. They row'd about a League, and then set me down on a Strand. I ask'd what Country it was? They all swore they were as ignorant of it as myself, and push'd off immediately, advising me to make haste, for fear of the Tide. I walked forward in this desolate Condition, till I came to firm Ground, where I sat down to consider what I should do. Being a little refresh'd, I went up into the Country, resolving to deliver my self to the first Savages I met, and purchase my Life with what Toys I had about me. The Land was divided by long Rows of Trees growing irregularly; there was Plenty of Grass, and several Fields of Oats. I walked very circumspectly, for fear of being suddenly shot, and at length came into a beaten Road, where I perceived the Tracks of human Feet, some of Cows, but most of Horses. At last, I observed several Animals in a Field, and some

of the same kind upon Trees; their Shape was very singular and deformed, which a little discompoed me; so that I lay down behind a Hedge to observe them the better. Some of them coming nigher me, I observed their Heads and Breasts were covered with a thick Hair, with Beards like Goats, and a long Ridge of Hair down their Backs, and the Foreparts of their Legs and Feet; but the rest of their Bodies were bare, and their Skins of a brown Colour. They had no Tails, nor any Hair upon their Buttocks, but on the Place where they sit, which Nature had provided to defend them from the Ground; for this Posture they used as much as any other. They could climb Trees like a Squirrel, and had sharp crooked Claws before and behind. The Females were not so large as the Males, their Dugs hung between their Fore-feet, and often reach'd the Ground as they walk'd. Upon the whole, I never saw so disagreeable a Creature in my Life, nor one against which I naturally conceived a greater Antipathy. So that, thinking I had seen enough, I got up and pursued my Way along the Road, in hopes of meeting with some *Indian's* Cabbin. I had not gone far, when I met one of those ugly Creatures coming directly to me. The ugly Monster approaching me, distorted his Features, and lift up his Fore-paw, but whether out of Curiosity or Mischief, I could not tell. I therefore drew my Hanger, and gave

gave him a Blow with the flat Side, fearful of striking with the Edge, lest it might incense the Inhabitants against me, for killing or laming any of their Cattle. When the Beast felt the Smart, he roared so loud, that a Herd of them came howling about me, making odious Faces; But I ran to a Tree, and leaning my Back against it, kept them off with my Hanger. Several of the cursed Brood leapt upon the Tree, and discharged their Excrements upon my Head, till I was almost stifled with Filth. In the midst of this Distress, I observed them all to run away, at which I pursued the Road, wondering at the Reason of their Flight. But looking on my left Hand, I saw a Horse walking softly in the Field, which, as I afterwards found, was the Cause of those Animals leaving me suddenly. The Horse stared at the first Sight of me, but recovering himself, looked in my Face with some Marks of Wonder, and walked round me several times. I would have pursued my Journey, but he stood in my way, looking mildly upon me, without offering the least Violence. We gazed at each other for some time; at last I put out my Hand to stroke him, and used him as we do, when we are going to handle a strange Horse. But he shook his Head at me with Disdain, and bent his Brows, gently raising his Fore-foot to remove my Hand, and then neighed in such a manner, that I thought he was speaking to

himself in a Language of his own. While he and I were thus employ'd, another Horse came up, and applying himself to the former, they gently struck each other's right Hoof, and neigh'd alternatively with a various Sound, which seemed almost articulate. They walked from me Side by Side, like Persons conferring together, often turning their Eyes towards me, as it were to watch, that I might not make my Escape. I was amazed to see such Actions in brute Beasts, and concluded, that if the Inhabitants were endued with a proportionable Degree of Reason, they must needs be wise People. Encourag'd with this Thought, I resolv'd to go forward, till I could discover some House, or meet with any of the Natives, and leave the two Horses to discourse together as they pleas'd. But the first, which was a dapple grey, perceiving me to steal away, neigh'd after me in so expressive a Tone, that I fancied I knew what he meant. Whereupon I turn'd back to wait his Commands, but not without some fear from this Adventure, as the Reader must easily believe, considering my present Condition. The two Horses advanc'd to me, and look'd earnestly at my Hands and Face. The grey Steed so discomposed my Hat, by rubbing it with his right Forefoot, that I took it off, to put it better upon my Head; whereat, both he and the brown Bay (which was the other's Colour) appeared surprized. The latter

latter felt the Lappet of my Coat, and finding it to hang loose about me, they both look'd with Signs of Wonder. He stroak'd my right Hand, and seem'd to admire its Softness and Colour, but squeezed it so hard between his Hoof and his Pastern, that I was forc'd to cry out; after which they used me more tenderly. They neigh'd to each other at the Sight of my Shoes and Stockings, which they often felt, and used various Gestures, not unlike those of a Philosopher, when he is about to solve some difficult Phænomenon. In short, the Behaviour of these Animals was so rational and judicious, that I concluded there must needs be some magical Metamorphosis of themselves upon some extraordinary Design, or they were really surprized to see a Man so different from the natural Complexion and Habit of the Country. The Power of this Reflection made me venture to address myself to them in the following manner. *Gentlemen, If ye are Sorcerers, as I have reason to believe, you can understand any Language; I therefore make bold to let your Worships know, that I am a poor distress'd Englishman, drove by Misfortunes upon this Coast, and intreat the Favour of riding on one of your Backs to the next Village.* In return of which Favour, (taking my Knife and Bracelet out of my Pocket) I will make you this Present. The two Creatures were silent, but seem'd to listen attentively; and when I had done, they neigh'd to each other, as if they

they were engaged in serious Conversation. I observed that their Language expressed the Passions very well; and the Words might be resolved into an Alphabet more easy than the *Chinese*. They often repeated the Word *Yaboo*; and tho' I could not guess at the Meaning of it, I endeavour'd to practise the Sound, and as soon as they were silent, I boldly pronounc'd *Yaboo*, imitating the Neigh of a Horse at the same time. At which, in a Surprise, they repeated the same, as if they meant to teach me the right Accent. I spoke after them as well as I could, and found my self somewhat improv'd. The Bay tried me with another Word, which reduced to our *English* Orthography, may be spelt thus, *Houyhnbnm*. By repeated Tryals, I succeeded so well in this, that they both appear'd surprized at my Capacity. After their Discourse was ended, the two Friends parted with the same Compliment of striking Hoofs, and made Signs for me to walk before; when slackened, one cry'd, *Hbuun, Hbuun*, and I guessing his Meaning, made Signs, that I was weary, upon which he allow'd me to stand a while to rest.

C H A P. II.

The Author conducted by a Houyhnhnm to his House. The House describ'd. The Author's Reception. The Food of the Houyhnhnms. The Author is distress'd for want of Viſtuals. And his manner of feeding in this Country.

HAVING travelled about three Miles, we came to a long Timber Building, whole Roof was low, and covered with Straw. At the Sight of which, I began to be comforted, and took out my Toys, in hopes they would encourage the People of the House to use me kindly. The Horse made me a Sign to go in first; the Room had a smooth Clay Floor, and a Rack and Manger the whole length of it on one Side. There were three Naggs, and a Mare sitting down upon their Hams, and others employ'd in domestick Business. They seem'd but ordinary Cattle; however this confirm'd my former Opinion of the Wisdom of that People, who could so far civilize brute Animals. The Grey came in soon after, and neighed several times to them in a Style of Authority, and received Answers. Beyond this Room were three others, to which you passed through three Doors, opposite to each other. We went to the last, and here the Gray walk'd in first, beck-

beckoning me to attend him. I waited in the second Room, and prepared my Presents for the Masters and Mistresses of the House. The Horse neigh'd three or four times, and I waited to hear some human Voice, but observed no other Returns, than a shriller Voice in the same Dialect, and began to think it must be some great Person's House, from the Difficulty of Admittance: But that a Man of Quality should be serv'd only by Horses, I could not comprehend. I began to think my Brain was disturb'd, and look'd about the Room, which I found furnished after the manner of the first, but more elegantly. In short I absolutely concluded it must be all Necromancy; but had not time to pursue my Reflections, for the grey Horse came and made me a Sign to follow him into the third Room, where I saw a handsome Mare, Colt and Foal, sitting on their Haunches, on Matts artfully made, and perfectly neat and clean. The Mare rose up, and after observing my Hands and Face, look'd contemptuously at me, and turning to the Horse, I heard the word *Yahoo* mention'd between them, which tho' I did not understand, was soon better inform'd to my Mortification. For the Horse beckoning to me with his Head, and repeating the Word *Hbuun Hbuun*, he led me thro' a Court to a Building at some distance, where were three of those detestable Creatures I had seen before, feeding upon the Flesh of Animals and
Roots.

Roots. They were fastened by the Neck, with strong Withes to a Beam, and held the Flesh between their Claws, while they tore it with their Teeth. The Master Horse ordered a sorrel Nagg, one of his Servants, to untye the largest of these Animals, and take him into the Yard ; where they compared us together, and repeated the Word *Yaboo*. My Horror and Surprize were great, when I observ'd a perfect human Figure. The Face was flat and broad, the Nose depressed, the Lips large, and Mouth wide; but these Differences are common to all savage Nations, whose Natives lye groveling on the Earth, or are carried on their Mothers Backs. The Fore-feet of the *Yaboo* differed from my Hands, only in the Length of the Nails, Coarseness of the Palms, and Hairiness on the Back. Their Feet resembled ours, and every part of the Body, except as to the Hairiness and Colour. What seem'd most strange to the two Horses, was to see the rest of my Body, so different from a *Yaboo*, which was occasion'd by my Cloaths; but this they did not conceive. The sorrel Nagg offered me a Root, which he held beetween his Hoof and Pastern; this I smelt to, and return'd it as civilly as I could. He brought me a Piece of Ass's Flesh, which smelt so offensively, that I could not bear it; he then threw it to a *Yaboo*, who devoured it greedily. He afterwards shewed me Hay and Oats, which I signified was not Food for me; and indeed

indeed began to apprehend that I must absolutely starve, if I could not meet with some of my own Species. The Master Horse, observing how detestable the *Tahoo* appear'd to me by my Behaviour, sent him back to his Kennel. He then made Signs, by putting his Fore-hoof to his Mouth, to know what I would eat. But I could not answer him, to make him understand me; and altho' he had, I saw no possible way of contriving to get Nourishment. At this Juncture I saw a Cow going by, and expressed a Desire of milking her. This answered my End, for he ordered a Mare Servant, to open a Room, where was good store of Milk, in earthen and wooden Vessels, in an orderly and cleanly Manner. She gave me a large Bowl-full, which I drank off, and found myself refreshed. About Noon I saw a Vehicle, drawn like a Sledge, by four *Tahoo's*, coming towards the Houle. There was in it an old Steed of Quality, who alighted with his Hind-foot forward, having hurt his left Fore-foot. He came to dine with our Horse, who received him very civilly. They dined in the best Room, and had Oats boil'd in Milk, for the second Course, which they warmed for the old Horse, but the rest eat them cold. Their Mangers were placed round in the middle of the Room, in which were several Partitions, round which they sat upon Trusses of Straw. Thus they dined with much Decency and Regularity, having eve-

ry one his Mess. The young Colt and Foal appeared very modest, and the Master and Mistress very gay and complaisant to their Guest: The Grey ordered me to stand by him, and much Discourse passed between them concerning me, as I perceiv'd by their Looks, and frequent Repetition of the word *Yahoo*. I happened to wear my Gloves, which so perplexed the Master Grey, that he put his Hoof several times to them, signifying that I should pull them off, which I did, and put them into my Pocket. I soon found the good Effects of this Behaviour, and was ordered to speak those Words I understood; and while they were at Dinner, the Master taught me the Names for Oats, Milk, Fire, and Water, &c. which I pronounced after him, having a great Facility in learning Languages. When they had dined, the Master Horse by many Signs, express'd a Concern, that I had nothing to eat. I pronounced the word *Hlunnb* (which signifies Oats in their Language) two or three times; for tho' I had refused them before, I considered that I could make a Sort of Bread with them, which would keep me from starving. The Horse immediately ordered a Mare Servant, to give me a good Quantity of Oats. These I dried before the Fire, then rubb'd them to loosen the Husks, which I winnow'd from the Grain. I ground them between two Stones, and made them into a Paste with Water, which I toasted by the Fire, and eat
with

with warm Milk. It was at first an insipid Diet, though common enough in some parts of *Europe*; but grew tolerable in time, especially to one who had been under Necessities so often. And I cannot but observe, that I had not one Hour's Sickness while I staid in this Island. 'Tis true I made shift to catch a Rabbit or Bird with Gins made of *Tahoo's* Hairs, and gathered wholesome Herbs, which I boil'd or eat like Sallet, with my Bread, and now and then made Butter, and drank the Whey. I was at a loss for Salt at first, but Custom reconciled the want of it, and I am confident its Use is the Effect of Luxury among us; and that it is only necessary in the preserving of Flesh; for we observe no Animals to be fond of it but Man; and for my part, I could not endure the Taste of it for some time after I had left this Country. I have said enough upon the Subject of my Diet; but thought it necessary to mention this, lest the World should think it impossible, I could find Sustenance in such a Country for three Years together. When it grew towards Evening, the Master Horse ordered me a Place to lye in; it was very near the House, and separated from the Stable of the *Tahoo's*. Here I got some Straw, and covering my self with my own Cloaths, slept very sound. But was in a short time better accommodated, as the Reader shall know hereafter.

CHAP. III.

The Author studies the Language, by the Assistance of his Master the Houyhnhnm. The Language described. Several Houyhnhnms of Quality come to see the Author. He gives his Master a short Account of his Voyage.

MY principal Endeavour was to learn the Language, in which my Master (for so I shall henceforth call him) his Children and Servants instructed me. For they look'd upon it as a Prodigy, that so much Reason should appear in a brute Animal. I enquired the Name of every thing, and corrected my bad Accent, by hearing the Words often pronounced, in which a *torrel Nagg* principally assisted me. In speaking, they pronounce thro' the Nose like the *High Dutch*, but their Language is more graceful and significant. The Emperor *Charles V.* made almost the same Observation, when he said, that if he was to speak to his Horse, it should be in *High Dutch*. My Master, whose Curiosity of knowing what Animal I was, and from whence I came, spent many leisure Hours to instruct me, and hoped, by the Proficiency I had made, I should soon be capable of answering his Expectation. To help my Memory, I formed all I learn'd into the

English

English Alphabet, and writ the Words down with the Translations. And as I ventured to do this in my Master's Presence, it cost me a great deal of Pains to explain to him what I was about; for the Inhabitants have not the least Idea of Books or Learning. In about ten Weeks, I began to understand his Questions, and in three Months could give some tolerable Answers. He was extremely desirous of knowing from what Part of the Country I came, and how I came to imitate a rational Creature, because the *Yaboo's* (whom I resembled in those Parts he could see) with some Appearance of Cunning and mischievous Disposition, were the most unteachable of all Brutes. I told him, that I came over in a hollow Vessel made of Trees, and how my Companions had serv'd me. But he replied, I must be mistaken, or *said the thing which was not*, they having no Word to express Falshood or Lying; for it was impossible that there could be a Country where I had said, or that Brutes could make a Vessel to move where they pleased upon the Water. That no *Houyhnhnm* could make such a Vessel, or would trust *Yaboo's* to manage it. The Word *Houyhnhnm*, in their Tongue, signifies a Horse, and, in its Etymology, *the Perfection of Nature*. I told my Master, I was at a Loss to express myself, but hoped to be able to tell him Wonders in a short time. He ordered all his Family to instruct me, spent two or three

three Hours a Day himself for that Purpose. Several Horses and Mares of Quality came to see me, upon the Report that there was a wonderful *Yahoo*, who could speak like a *Houyhnhnm*, and seemed to discover some Glimmering of Reason. These asked me many Questions, and received such Answers as I could return; by which Advantages, in five Months, I understood all that was spoke, and could express myself tolerably well. The *Houyhnhnms*, who came to see me, could hardly believe me to be a *Yahoo*, from my Body being differently covered, and were astonished to observe me without the usual Hair or Skin, except on my Head, Face, or Hands; but I discovered that Secret to my Master, about a Fortnight before. As it was my Custom every Night, when the Family was gone to Bed, to strip and cover my self with my Cloaths, my Master sent for me by his sorrel Nagg one Morning, as I was fast asleep; my Cloaths fallen off, and my Shirt lying disorderly, I awaked at the Noise, and observed him to deliver his Message in Confusion; after which, he went to his Master, and told him all he had discovered. When I was dressed, I went to pay my Attendance upon his Honour, who asked the Meaning of what his Servant had reported; that I was different asleep and awake, and that my Body was whiter then than at another Time. I had hitherto concealed the Secret of my Dress,

to

to be distinguished from that cursed Race of *Yaboo's*; but finding it in vain to do so any longer, I therefore told my Master, that in our Country we kept our Bodies from Heat and Cold, as well as to avoid the Inclemencies of the Air, by covering them with the Hairs of certain Animals artfully prepared for that Use; that if he pleased to give me his Command, I would soon convince him; he told me I might do as I pleased. Whereupon I undress'd my self before him, having a Regard to all necessary Decency. He took my Cloaths one Piece after another, and looked diligently at them; then walked round me, and stroak'd my Body gently; after which, he said, I must be a *Yaboo*, tho' I differed very much from the rest of my Species, in the Softness and Whiteness of my Skin, and my Want of Hair on several Parts of my Body, the Shape and Shortness of my Claws, and my continual walking upright. He desired to see no more, and gave me Leave to put on my Cloaths. I expressed an Uneasiness at his calling me by the Name of that odious Animal, and begg'd he would not apply it to me, and give the same Order to his Family or Friends who were suffered to see me; and desired he would keep the Knowledge of my false Covering to himself, at least, as long as my present Cloathing lasted, and command his sorrel Nagg to conceal it. All this he consented to, which was kept secret till my
Cloaths

Cloaths began to wear out, which I was forced to supply by several Contrivances. In the mean time, he desired me to apply my utmost Diligence in learning the Language, adding, that he had long waited with Impatience to hear the Wonders which I had to tell him. From thenceforward he took more Pains to instruct me, and brought me into all Company, whom he desired to treat me civilly, that I might be more diverting. Every Day when I waited on him, he would ask me several Questions concerning myself, and had already conceived by my Answers, some general Ideas, tho' imperfect. It would be tedious to relate the particular Steps we made in Conversation; but the first Account that I gave of myself in any Order or Length, was to the following Purpose. That I came from a distant Country, as I had told him before, in Company with Fifty of my own Species; that we travelled in a large hollow Vessel made of Wood, and larger than his Honour's House. I describ'd the Ship to him as well as I could, and with my Handkerchief explained the Manner how it was driven forward by the Wind. That a Quarrel arising among us, I was set on Shore, and walked on without knowing whither, till he delivered me from the Persecution of those detestable *Taboo's*. He asked me who made the Ship, and how it was possible, that the *Houybnhms* of any Country would leave the Management of

of it to Brutes. I told him, I would proceed no farther in my Relation, unless I had his Promise that he would not be offended. He agreed, and I went on, assuring him that the Ship was made by Creatures of my own Species, who, in all Countries where I had travelled were the only rational Creatures. That at my coming into this Country, I was as much surprized at their Rationality, as they were at mine. I said farther, that if good Fortune ever restored me to my native Country, and I should relate my Travels hither, every body will think that *I said the thing which was not*; and that with all possible Respect to himself and Family, and under his Promise of not being offended, our Countrymen would think it improbable, that a *Houyhnhnm* should be the presiding Creature in a Country, and a *Yaboo* the Brute.



C H A P. IV.

The Houyhnhnms Notion of Truth and Falshood.

The Author's Discourse disapprov'd by his Master. He gives a farther Account of himself, and the Accidents of his Voyage.



Y Master heard me with Marks of Uneasiness in his Countenance; because doubting, and not believing, are so little known in this Country, that in

such Circumstances, the Inhabitants are at a loss how to behave themselves. And I remember, in some Discourses concerning Manhood, in other parts of the World, I mentioned *Lying* and *false Misrepresentation*, which were Terms he comprehended with Difficulty, altho' he had an acute Judgment. And this was his Argument: That by the Use of Speech we understood one another, and received Information of Facts; now, if any one *said the thing which was not*, those Ends are destroyed; because it cannot be properly said, I understand him; being so far from receiving Information, that he leaves me worse than in Ignorance; for I am induced to believe, that *Black is White*, and *Short, Long*. These were his Notions of *Lying*, so perfectly understood among human Creatures. To return from this Digression. My Master could not

G

con-

conceive the *Taboo's* to be governing Animals in my Country, and desired to know whether we had any *Houyhnhnms* among us, and in what manner they liv'd. I told him, they grazed in Summer, and in Winter were kept in Houses, when *Taboo* Servants were employ'd in feeding, keeping them clean, and making their Beds. I understand from all you have said, reply'd my Master, that whatever Share of Reason the *Taboo's* have, the *Houyhnhnms* are Masters; and I heartily wish our *Taboo's* were so tractable. I begg'd his Honour to excuse my proceeding any farther, lest I should say something very displeasing. But he insisted that I should tell him the best and worst. To obey him, I said I must own, that the *Houyhnhnms* among us, whom we called *Horses*, were the most generous and comely Animal we had, and excelled in Strength and Swiftmess. That when they belong'd to great Men, they were employ'd in Travelling, Racing, and Drawing of Chariots; and were well used as long as they were sound; but if otherwise, were sold, and labour'd hard till they died; after which, they were stript of their Skins, and their Bodies devoured by Dogs and Birds of Prey. I described, as well as I could, our Manner of Riding, the Shape and Use of a Bridle, Saddle, a Spur and Whip, Harness and Wheels. I added, that we placed a sort of hard Substance to the Bottoms of their Feet, called *Iron*, to preserve their

their Hoofs from being hurt. My Master, after some Expressions of Indignation, wondered how we durst venture on the Back of a *Houghninn*; for he was sure, that the meanest Servant of his was able to shake off the strongest *Yahoo*, and squeeze him to Death. I answered, that our Horses were trained up, when young, to the Uses we intended them. That if they proved vicious, we used severe Methods to tame them; That we *castrated* the Males, to make them more gentle; that they were sensible of Rewards and Punishments, but have as little Reason as the *Yahoo's* of this Country. I had some Difficulty to make him understand what I said, their Language not being so copious as ours, because their Wants and Passions are fewer. But I can hardly express his Resentment, at our savage Treatment of the *Houghninnms*, particularly when I had explained the manner of *castrating* Horses among us. He said, if it were possible there could be a Country, where *Yahoo's* alone were the governing Animals, they must be rational, because Reason will, in time, always prevail against brutal Strength. But considering the Frame of our Bodies, especially mine, he thought no Creature so ill contriv'd, to employ reason in the Offices of Life. Whereupon he desired to know, whether they resembled me, or the *Yahoo's* of his Country. I assured him, that I was as well shap'd as most of my Age; but that the younger,

and the Females were softer and whiter, especially the latter. He said I differ'd in my Cleanliness from other *Tahoo's*; but in Point of real Advantage he thought I differ'd for the worse. That the Nails of my Hinder-feet were of no Use, and as to my Fore-feet, he could not properly so call them, having not seen me walk upon them, and thought they were too tender for the Ground. He then began to find Fault with other Parts of my Body; as, the Flatness of my Face, the Prominence of my Nose, the Position of my Eyes, with which I could not look sideways, without turning my Head. He knew not, what could be the Use of those several Clefts in my Feet behind; that they were too soft to bear the Hardness of Stones; and that my Body wanted a Fence against Heat and Cold, which I had the Trouble of putting on and off every Day. And lastly, that he observ'd every Animal in this Country, naturally abhorred the *Tahoo's*, whom the weaker avoided, and the stronger pursued: So that, supposing us reasonable, he could not see it was possible to cure that Antipathy, which other Creatures had against us; nor consequently, how we could tame, and make them serviceable. However, he said he would debate the Matter no farther, being willing to hear the History of my Country, and Actions of my Life, before I came thither. I assured him, I was desirous he should be satisfy'd; but

but doubted, whether I could explain myself to his Conception, promising I would do my best, to express myself by Similitudes, desiring his Assistance, if I wanted Words. I said my Birth was of honest Parents in *England*, a Country remote from this, by as many Days Journey, as the strongest of his Honour's Servants could travel in the Annual Course of the Sun. That I was bred a Surgeon, whose Employment is to cure Wounds or Hurts got by Accident. That my Country was governed by a Female Man, whom we call'd *Queen*, which I left to get Riches, that I might maintain my Family better, at my Return. That I was Commander of the Ship, with fifty *Raboo's* under me, many of whom dying, I was forced to supply them by others from several Nations; That our Ship was twice in Danger of sinking, first by a Storm, and since, by striking against a Rock. Here my Master interrupted me, by asking, how I could perswade Strangers to venture, after the Losses I had sustained, and the Hazards I had run. I said, they were Men of desperate Fortunes, forced on account of their Poverty, or Crimes, to leave their native Country; some were ruin'd by Law-Suits, others squandered away all they had, in Drinking, Whoring, and Gaming; some fled for Treason; many for Murder, Robbery, Perjury, &c. and that none of these durst return home, for fear of Punishment; and therefore were under a Ne-

cessity of seeking a Livelihood in other Places. During this Discourse, my Master interrupted me often, to explain the Nature, of the different Crimes I had mentioned; And this Task took up several Days Conversation, before he could comprehend me. He was entirely at a loss to know, what could be the Use or Necessity, of practising such Vices. To clear which, I endeavour'd to give him some Ideas of the Desire of Wealth and Power, and of the terrible Effects of Lust, Malice, and Intemperance. All this I was forced to describe, by putting Cases, and making Suppositions. After which, he lifted up his Eyes with Amazement and Indignation, and desired I would give him some particular Account of *Europe*, and especially of my own Country.



C H A P. V.

The Author, at his Master's Command, informs him of the State of England. The Causes of War among the Princes of Europe. and explains the English Constitution.

TH E reader may please to observe, that the following is an Extract of several Discourses I had with my Master, containing the most material Points of our Conversation; his Honour often desiring fuller Satisfaction, as I improved in the Language. I gave him an Account of the State of *Europe*, as well as I could, as to Trade, Manufactures, Arts, and Sciences, and I answered him, as Opportunity served, from the Subject of our Conversation; But shall here only take Notice of the Substance of what passed, without any Regard to Time or Circumstances. My only Fear is, that I shall not be able to do Justice to my Master's Arguments and Expressions, for want of a due Capacity, as well as by a Translation, into our barbarous *English*. In Obedience therefore to his Honour's Commands, I related the *Revolution* under the Prince of *Orange*, The long War with *France*, entered into by that Prince, and renew'd by his Successor, the Queen; wherein, the chief Powers of *Christ-*

endom, were engag'd at this time. I computed, that a Million of *Yahoo's* might have been killed, a hundred Cities taken, and thrice as many Ships lost. He ask'd me, what were the usual Motives of War among us? I answer'd, many were the Motives, but should mention a few of the Chief. Sometimes the Ambition of Princes, to extend their Dominions: Sometimes the Policy of corrupt Ministers, who engage their Masters in a War, to divert the Clamour of the People against their Male Administration. Difference in Opinions, hath cost many Million of Lives: For instance, whether *Flesh* be *Bread*, or *Bread* *Flesh*; whether the Juice of a certain *Fruit* be *Blood* or *Wine*; whether *Whistling* be a Vice, or a Vertue; whether it is better to *kiss* a *Post*, or throw it in the Fire; and what is the best Colour for a *Coat*, whether *Black*, *White*, *Red*, or *Grey*; and whether it should be *long* or *short*, *narrow* or *wide*, *dirty* or *clean*, with many more. And there are no Wars so bloody or lasting, as those occasioned by Difference in Opinion; especially if it be in trivial Matters. Sometimes two Princes quarrel who shall take Possession of the Dominion of a third, where neither of them have any Pretension of Right. Sometimes one Prince quarrels with another, for fear the other should quarrel with him. Sometimes they enter into a War, because the Enemy is too strong, and another time, because he is too weak.

Some

Sometimes our Neighbours *want* the things we *have*; or *have* the things we *want*, and we fight till they take ours, or give us theirs. It is a justifiable Cause of War, to invade a Country, when the People have been destroy'd by Pestilence or Famine, or in Faction among themselves. And so it is, to enter into War against our Ally, when one of his Towns lyes convenient for us, or a Territory of Land, that would make our Dominions compleat. If a Prince sends Forces into a Nation, where the People are poor and ignorant, he may lawfully kill one half, and enslave the rest, to reduce them from their barbarous Customs. It is an honourable and frequent Practice, when one Prince desires the Assistance of another, to secure his Dominions against Invasion, that the Assistant, when he hath driven out the Invader, should possess himself of the Dominion, and kill or banish the Prince, whom he came to defend. Alliances by Blood, or Intermarriages, is a frequent Cause of War between Princes, and the nearer they are related, the greater the Disposition to quarrel. Poor Nations are *Hungry*, and Rich ones *Proud*; and Pride and Hunger will never agree. For these Reasons, the Trade of a *Soldier* is held the most honourable: A *Soldier* being a *Ta-booo* hired to kill as many of his own Species as he can, who have never offended him. There are likewise another kind of Princes, in the Northern part of *Europe*, who not able

to make War themselves, hire their Troops to other Nations, which is the best part of their Maintenance. What you have said upon the Subject of War, reply'd my Master, discovers the admirable Effects of that Reason you pretend to. However, it is happy that the *Shame* is greater than the *Danger*; and that Nature hath made you incapable of doing much Mischief. For your Mouths lying flat to your Faces, you can hardly bite each other; then as to your Claws, they are so short, that one of our *Taboo's* will drive a dozen of yours before him. And therefore, as to the Number slain in Battle, I cannot but think, that you have *said the thing which is not*. I smil'd at his Ignorance in such Affairs, and shaking my Head, gave him a Description of Cannons, Mortars, Swords, Powder and Ball, and other warlike Preparations and Machines, with the terrible Slaughter they occasion'd, and the dismal Consequences they produc'd. And to set forth the Valour of my Countrymen, I assured him, I had seen a Hundred Enemies blown up at once, and beheld the Pieces of dead Bodies fall, to the great Diversion of the Spectators. I was going on, but my Master commanded my Silence, and said, Whoever understood the Nature of *Taboo's*, might believe it possible for so vile an Animal to be capable of the Actions I had mentioned; but as my Discourse had increased his Abhorrence

of them, so it gave him a Disturbance in his Mind, to which he was a Stranger before. That altho' he hated a *Yaboo*, yet he no more blamed them for their ill Qualities, than he did a *Gnnayb* (a Bird of Prey) for its Cruelty, or a sharp Stone for cutting his Hoof. But when a rational Creature could be capable of such Enormities, he feared that the Corruption of that Faculty was worse than Brutality it self. He seemed confident therefore, that instead of Reason, we had only some Quality, adapted to encrease our natural Vices; as the Reflection from a troubled Stream returns the Image of an ill shaped Body, not only larger, but more *distorted*. He added, that he had heard too much upon the Subject of War, and desired to be informed, how some of our Crew, whom I said were ruined by *Law*, came to be ruined by that, which was intended for *every* Man's Preservation. Therefore he desired to know what I meant by *Law*, and what sort of People were Dispensers thereof, by whose Practices, a Person's Property could be lost, instead of being preserv'd. And added, he saw no Occasion for this thing call'd *Law*, since all the Intentions and Purposes of it may be answered, by following the Dictates of *Nature* and *Reason*. I assured his Honour, that *Law* was a Science I had not been conversant in, any more than by employing Advocates in vain, upon some Injustices done me, by con-
versing

versing with others, who had lost their Fortunes by the same means, and had left their Country, under the Mortification of such Disappointments; however I would give him all the Satisfaction I was able. I said, that those who made Profession of this Science, were as numerous as Caterpillars; that they were of different Degrees, Distinctions, and Denominations. The Number of those in this Profession was so great, that the fair Income of the Profession was not sufficient for the Maintenance of the Multitudes who follow'd it. Hence it was found necessary, to supply that by Artifice and Cunning, which could not be obtain'd by just and honest Methods. To bring which to pass, many of our Youth were bred up in the Art of proving by Words, multiply'd for that Purpose, that *White is Black*, and *Black White*, according as they are paid. The Greatness of their Assurance gain'd upon the Vulgar, of whom they made Slaves, and got into their Hands the largest share of the Practice of their Profession. That these Practitioners were call'd *Pettifoggers*, (that is, *Confounders or Destroyers of Right*) as my Acquaintance and I were convinc'd, by being engag'd only with this Species of the Profession. I desired his Honour to understand, that the Ruin I complain'd of, and Description I had to give, related to those Sectaries only; and how their Misfortunes were brought upon us, I could

not better explain, than by giving an Example. My Neighbour, said I, I will suppose, has a Mind to my Cow, and hires one of these Advocates to prove he ought to have her from me. I must then have another to defend my Right; no Man, according to the Rules of Law, being allow'd to speak for himself. Now, in this Case, though I am the right Owner, I lie under two Disadvantages. First my Advocate being used to the defending of Falshood, is quite out of his Element, when he would argue for Right. The Second is, that he must proceed with Caution; for since the Maintenance of so many depends upon keeping up the Business, should he proceed too summarily, he would incur the Hatred and Displeasure of his Brethren, and be esteem'd a Lessener of the Practice of the Law. This being the Case, I have but two Methods to preserve my Cow. The first is, to gain my Adversary's Advocate over, by a double Fee: And the second, for my Advocate not to insist on the Justice of my Cause, by allowing the Cow to belong to my Adversary; for it hath been observed, that under the Management of such Practitioners, the wrong Side has the fairer Chance for Success; especially when it happens, as it did in mine and my Friend's Case, and may have done since, that the Person appointed to decide Controversies of Property, or Tryals of Criminals, who should be chosen from the
most

most knowing of his Profession, by the Recommendation of a Favourite, or Court-Mistress, is taken out of the Sect aforementioned; and besides, thro' Age and Infirmary, grown unactive and unattentive, and thereby incapable of performing the Duty of his Office. In such Cases, Decisions and Determinations may with reason be expected on the wrong Side; since those, who can take a long Harangue and great Noise for Reasoning, are not much to be wondered at, if they inter the Weight of the Argument from the Heaviness of the Pleading. It is a Maxim among those Men, that whatever has been done before, may lawfully be done again; and therefore they take special Care, to record all Decisions formerly made, even those, which, thro' Ignorance and Corruption, have contradicted the common Rules of Justice, and Reason of Mankind. These, under the Name of *Precedents*, they produce as Authorities, to justify their inequitable Opinions. In pleading, they care not to enter into the *Merits* of the Cause, but are loud, violent, and tedious, in dwelling upon *Circumstances* not to the Purpose. For Instance, in the Case just mentioned, they never desire to know, what Title my Adversary hath to the Cow, but enquire into the Colour and Length of her Horns, and whether she grazed in a square or round Field, whether she was milk'd at home, or abroad, &c. after which, they consult *Precedents*,

cedents, adjourn the Cause from time to time, and in twenty or thirty Years it comes to an Issue. It is likewise to be observed, that this Society has a particular Jargon, that nobody understands but themselves, wherein all their Laws are written, which they take care to multiply ; by which means, they have almost confounded the very Essence of Truth and Falshood, of Right and Wrong ; so that it may take thirty Years to decide, whether the Field left me by my Ancestors, for six Generations, belongs to me or a Stranger. In the Tryals of Persons accused of Crimes against the State, the Method is more short and commendable ; for if those in Power take care to recommend one of this Clan, his Method of Education and Practice makes it easy to him to condemn or acquit a Criminal, and at the same time, strictly preserve all due Forms of Law. Here my Master interposing, said it was pity that Creatures of such prodigious Abilities of Mind, as those Advocates must be, were not employ'd to instruct others in Wisdom and Knowledge. In answer to which, I assur'd his Honour, that the Business and Study of their Profession, took up all their Thoughts and Time, and that therefore, in all Points out of their own Trade, many of them were so stupid and ignorant, that it was hard to pick out of any Profession, a Set of Men more despicable in common Conversation, or greater Enemies

to

to Knowledge and Learning, being equally disposed to pervert the general Reason of Mankind, in every Subject of Conversation, as in that of their own Calling.

CHAP. VI.

The State of England continued. So well govern'd by a Queen, as to need no first Minister. The Character of one in some European Courts,

MY Master could not understand what incited these Lawyers to perplex and weary themselves, and engage in a Confederacy of Injustice, only for the sake of injuring their Fellow Creatures; or what I meant by their doing it for Hire. This put me to a great deal of Pains, to describe the Use of Money, and Value of Metals: I told him, that when a *Yaboo* had Store of this Substance, he was able to purchase the noblest Houses, and most delicious Meats, and have his Choice of the most beautiful Females. Therefore, since *Money* alone could perform all this, our *Yaboo's* thought they could not have enough, either to spend or save, as they found themselves inclined, from their natural Profusion or Avarice. That the Rich reaped the Fruits of the poor Man's Labour, the latter of which were a Thousand

said to one of the former. That the Bulk of our People labour'd hard every Day for small Wages, to make a few live plentifully. I enlarged much on these Particulars, but his Honour was still to seek: For he went upon a Supposition, that all Animals had a Title to share of the Productions of the Earth; and especially those who presided over the rest. Therefore he desired to know what these costly Meats were. Whereupon I mention'd various Sorts, and the Method of dressing them, which could not be done, without sending Ships to every Part of the World, as well for Liquors to drink, as for Sauces and other Conveniences. I assured him the whole Globe of Earth must be three times gone round, before one of our better Female *Taboo's* could get her Breakfast, or a Cup to put it in. He said, it must be a miserable Country indeed, which could not furnish its Inhabitants with Food; and what he most wondered at, how such vast Tracts of Land could be without Water, and the People oblig'd to send over Sea for Drink. I reply'd, that *England*, (the Place of my Nativity) was reckoned to produce three times more than the Inhabitants can consume, of all sorts of Necessaries for Life; but these were sent to other Countries, from whence, in Return we brought the Materials of Diseases, Folly and Vice, to feed our own Luxury. Hence it followed, that vast Numbers are compelled to

to seek their Livelihood by Begging, Robbing, Cheating, Forswearing, &c. every one of which Terms I took much Pains to make him understand. That Wine was not brought from other Countries, to supply the Want of Drinks, but because it made us merry by destroying our Senses; it raised our Hopes, and banished our Fears, and suspended every Office of Reason for a time, and deprived us of the Use of our Limbs, till we slept; although it must be confessed, that we always awak'd sick and dispirited; and that the Use of this Liquor filled us with Diseases, and rendered our Lives uncomfortable and short. That besides, the greatest Part of our People supported themselves by furnishing Necessaries for the Rich, and for each other. For Instance, when I am at Home, and dressed, I carry the Workmanship of an Hundred Tradesmen upon my Back, and my Wife thereof five times as many. I was going on to tell him, that we had a Sort of People among us, who got their Livelihood by attending the Sick, and with much Difficulty brought him to apprehend what I meant. He easily conceived, that a *Houybnbm* grew weak before he died, or sometimes broke a Limb by Accident; but thought it contradictory to the Perfection of Nature, that Pains should breed in our Bodies, and desired to know the Reason of so unaccountable an Evil. I told him, we fed upon a Thousand things which

which had contrary Operations; that we eat without Hunger, and drink without Thirst, sit up whole Nights to drink strong Liquors, which disposed us to Sloth, and spoil'd the Constitution of our Bodies. That prostitute Female *Yahoo's* corrupted the Bodies of those who fell into their Embraces; that this and many other Distempers were hereditary to us, there being hardly a Limb or Part of the Body exempt from some Malady or other. To remedy which, I told him we had a Sort of People who pretend to profess curing the Sick, and having some Knowledge in this Faculty, would let him into the whole Mystery of their Proceedings. The chief Cause of all Diseases is *Repletion*, whence they conclude it necessary to evacuate the Body, either by the natural Passages, or upwards by the Mouth. In the next Place, they contrive nauseous Compositions from the different Species of Minerals, Vegetables, and Parts of Animals mix'd together, which the Stomach rejects with Loathing, and this they call a Vomit; or else from the same Store-house, they make some poisonous Addition, and order us to take it at the upper or lower Orifice, which relaxing the Bowels, drives all down before it, and this is called a *Purge* or *Glyster*. For Nature, as *Physicians* reason, having designed the superior anterior Orifice for the *Intromission* of Solids, and the inferior for *Expulsion*, they consider, that in all Dis-

Diseases she is out of her Road, and therefore, to bring her into it again, act in a contrary manner, by interchanging the Use of each Orifice. But besides real Diseases, we are subject to imaginary ones, for which like Cures are invented, and with those our Female *Yahoos* are chiefly infested. Our Physicians are so well skill'd in *Prognosticks*, that when real Diseases are very malignant, they generally portend *Death*, which is always in their Power, when Recovery is not. And therefore, upon unexpected Signs of Amendment after they have pronounc'd Sentence, rather than be accounted false Prophets, they know how to screen their Ignorance, by a reasonable Dose. They are likewise of Use to Husbands and Wives, to Elder Sons, to great Ministers of State, and often to Princes. I had formerly discoursed upon the Subject of *Government* in general, and of our own excellent *Constitution* in particular; but having here accidentally mentioned a *Minister of State*, he desired to know what Species of *Yahoo* it was that went by that Name. I told him that our She Governor or Queen having no Ambition to extend her Power to the Injury of her Neighbours, or Prejudice of her Subjects, needed not a corrupt Minister to carry on or conceal any sinister Design making the Laws of her Country the Rule of her Actions, and subjected the Behaviour of those she entrusted with the Administration

tion of her Affairs, to the Censure and Examination of her Great Council: But I added, when Princes grew indolent and careless of their Affairs, they made Use of such an Administrator as I mentioned, under the Title of *Chief Minister of State*, the Description of whom may be allow'd to be as follows. That he is a Person exempt from Joy or Grief, Love or Hatred, Pity or Anger, or at least makes use of no Passion, but the Desire of Riches and Honour; he applies his Words to all Uses, but the declaring his own Mind. He never tells a *Truth*, but with an Intent that you should think it a *Lie*, and so, *vice versa*, he speaks worst of his Friends, and flatters his Enemies; and the worst Mark of Friendship you can receive from him is a *promise*, especially when it is confirmed with an Oath; after which every wise Man retires, and abandons all Hopes. There are three Methods of attaining this Honour: The first is, by knowing prudently how to dispose of a Wife, Daughter, or Sister; the next, by undermining a Predecessor, and the last by a *various Zeal* in publick Assemblies against the Corruptions of the Court. That these Ministers having the sole Disposal of Employments, preserve a Power of bribing the Majority of the Senate and Council; and at last, by an Act of Indemnity, live secure upon the spoils of the Publick. The Palace of a *Chief Minister* is a Seminary for others in the same Trade.

Trade. The Servants become *Ministers of State*, by imitating their Masters, and practising their Arts, and accordingly have a *subaltern Court* paid to them by Persons of Distinction; and sometimes by Force of Dexterity and Impudence, by Degrees become their Masters Successors. He is commonly grounded by a Favourite Wench, or Footman, who are the Channels thro' which all Favours are convey'd. My Master hearing me mention the Nobility of my Country, was pleas'd to compliment me, by saying, he was sure I was born of some noble Family, by my different Shape and Cleanliness from all the *Yahoos* of his Nation, and the Faculties of Speech and Reason, which I had to that Degree that I pass'd for a Prodigy among his Acquaintance. He made me observe, that among the *Houyhnhnms*, the *White*, the *Sorrel*, and the *Iron-Grey*, were not so well shaped as the *Bay*, the *Dapple-Grey*, and the *Black*; nor born with equal Talents of Mind; and therefore continued as Servants, and never match'd out of their own Race. I thank'd his Honour for the good Opinion he conceived of me, and satisfied him, that I was born of honest Parents, of the lower Sort, who were just able to afford me a tolerable Education; and that Nobility differed from the Idea he had of it. That our young Nobility were bred up in Luxury and Ease, who as soon as their Years would permit, ruin'd the

their Constitutions among lewd Females, and when their Fortunes were almost spent, they married some disagreeable Person for sake of her Money. That a weak Body, and lean Countenance were no uncommon Marks of a Great Man; and a healthy, robust Mind was so far from being commendable in a Man of Quality, that the World was apt to think his real Father of an inferior Family, especially when the Imperfections of his Mind answer those of his Body.

C H A P. VII.

The Author's great Love of his Country. His Master's Observation on the English Constitution and Administration, as described by the Author, with parallel Cases and Comparisons. His Master's Observations upon human Nature.

 HE Reader may wonder at the Representation I gave of my own Species, among a Race of Mortals, who conceived the vilest Opinion of human Kind, from my Resemblance of the *Yahoo's*. But I must confess, that the many excellent Virtues of those Quadrupeds, placed in opposite View to human Corruptions, had so far clear'd my Understanding, that I look'd upon the Actions of Men in a different Light.

And

And to deal candidly, I must own I had a much stronger Motive, for the Freedom I took in this Representation. I had not been a Year in this Country, before I contracted such a Veneration for the Inhabitants, that I resolv'd to pass the rest of my Days among them, in the Contemplation and Practice of their Virtues : But Fortune hindered my enjoying so great a Felicity. However I have the Comfort to reflect, that I *extenuated* the Fault of my Country-men, as much as I durst, before so strict an Examiner. For who will not be sway'd by some Partiality to the Place of his Birth ? When I had answered all his Questions, and his Curiosity seem'd satisfied, he sent for me one Morning, and commanding me to sit down at some Distance, he said, that, upon serious Consideration of what I had related of my self and Country, he look'd upon us a sort of Animals endued with some little Reason, which we made use of to encrease our natural Corruptions, and to acquire others, which Nature had not given us. That we had divested our selves of the Abilities she had given us, and seem'd to spend our whole Lives in endeavouring to supply them by our own Inventions. That, as to my self, I had neither the Strength or Activity of a *Tahoo*, that I walk'd infirmly on my hinder Feet, and had found out a Contrivance to make my Claws of no Use, and to take off the Hair of my Chin, which should

shelter

shelter me from the Sun and the Weather. That I could neither run nor climb like my Brethren (as he call'd them) the *Tahoo's* of his Country. That our Defects in Government and Law were owing to our Want of *Reason*, and consequently *Virtue*, because *Reason* is sufficient to govern a *rational Creature*, which was therefore a Character we could not challenge, even from my own Account, in which he perceiv'd I had conceal'd several Particulars, and often *said the thing which was not*. And what confirm'd him most in this Opinion, was my Resemblance of the *Tahoo's* in every Feature; and that by my Account of our Manners and Actions, he found no Difference in the Disposition of our Minds. He said, the *Tahoo's* were known to hate one another more than they did any other Animals; and this they attributed to the Odiousness of their own Shapes, which every one could see in others, but not in himself. He had therefore begun to think it commendable in us to cover our Bodies, to conceal our Deformities from each other. But he now found himself mistaken in the Cause of the Quarrels among those Brutes, and thought them to proceed from the same as ours. For (said he) among five *Tahoo's*, you throw Food sufficient for Fifty, they will fight among themselves, each willing to have it *all to himself*; and therefore when they feed abroad, a Servant is usually employ'd to stand by while

H

they

they eat. If a Cow happened to die, before a *Houyhnhnm* could secure it for his own *Yahoo's*, those in the Neighbourhood would come in Drove to seize it; upon which a terrible Battle would ensue, tho' they seldom killed one another, for want of such Instruments of Death as I had described; and if they find their Cause miscarry, they return home, and quarrel among themselves. That in some Fields, there are certain shining Stones of different Colours, which the *Yahoo's* are so fond of, that they dig them out of the Earth, and hide them by Heaps in their Kennels, and he never could discover the Reason of their extravagant Fancy for these Stones, but now he believed it might proceed from the same Principle of Avarice I had ascribed to Mankind. And that in those Fields which abound with such Stones, the most frequent Battles are fought, occasioned by the perpetual Inroads of the neighbouring *Yahoo's*. He said, it was frequent, when two *Yahoo's* discovered such a Stone, and were contending for it, that a third would come and carry it away; which he would needs have resembled our *Suits at Law*; in which, for our Credit, I would not undeceive him, that Decision being much more equitable than many of our Decrees; because the Plaintiff and Defendant there lost nothing but the Stone they contended for; whereas our *Courts of Equity* would have kept on the Cause, while either

I ad

The
Y
Th
Th

Coun

had any thing left. My Master continued his Discourse, and said that nothing rendered the *Yahoo's* more odious, than the voracious Appetite of these Animals, for every thing that came in their way; and it was peculiar to their Temper, to be fond of what Food they got by Stealth at a Distance, altho' they had better provided for them at home. The *Yahoo's* are the only Animals in this Country subject to Diseases, which are not contracted by any ill Treatment they meet with, but by the Nastiness and Greediness of that sordid Brute. He went on with so many malicious Insinuations and Comparisons of this kind, that I am ashamed to repeat, and at last allowed, that as to Learning, Government, and Arts, he found no Resemblance between the *Yahoo's* of his Country and ours.

C H A P. VIII.

The Author relates several Particulars of the Yahoo's, and the Virtue of the Houyhnhnms. The Education and Exercise of their Youth. Their General Assembly.



AS I ought to understand human Nature better than my Master; so I could more easily apply the Character of the *Yahoo's* to my self and Countrymen: And therefore begg'd the Fa-

vour of making my Observations of them among the Herds in the Neighbourhood, which he readily granted, and ordered me one of his Servants to attend me, without whose Protection I durst not undertake the Adventure; and I narrowly escaped falling into their Clutches three or four times. I had Reason to believe they imagined me one of their own Species; for when I discovered my naked Arms or Breasts to them, they would imitate my Actions like Monkies, but with the greatest Signs of Aversion. Altho' they are very nimble from their Infancy, I once caught a Cub of three Years old, but it squaled and bit to that Degree, that a whole Herd of old ones approached at the Noise; upon which I let it go. I observed, that it smelt very rank and disagreeable, and so bedaubed me with Filth, that I durst not venture into my Master's Presence, till I was sufficiently aired. By what I could discover of these Animals, they seemed the most indocile Creature I had ever met with, which, in my Opinion, proceeds from their obstinate Disposition. They are cunning and malicious, strong and hardy, but of a cowardly Spirit. It is observed, that the red haired of both Sexes are most libidinous, and exceed the rest in Strength and Activity. The *Houyhnhnms* keep the *Taboo's* they have Occasion for in Hutts near their Houses; but the rest feed abroad in the Fields upon what they

they can get. They take to the Water from their Infancy like Frogs, where they often catch Fish, which the Females carry home to their Cubs. I hope the Reader will pardon my relating an odd Adventure. As I was bathing my self one Day in a River, a young Female *Yahoo*, who perceived me, leap'd into the Water, and seeming inflamed with Desire, embraced me in so rude a manner, that I was terribly affrighted, and roared out, till my sorrel Nagg, who was grazing at a little Distance, gallop'd to my Relief; whereupon she quitted me, and stood gazing and howling on the Bank, all the Time I was putting on my Cloaths. As this Adventure was a Subject of Diversion to my Master and his Family, it was no less Mortification to me; for I could no longer deny my Resemblance of a *Yahoo*, it being proved by the natural Propensity of the Females to me, as one of their own Species. Having been three Years in this Country, the Reader will expect I should give him an Account of the Manners and Customs of the Inhabitants. As the *Houyhnhnms* are naturally endowed with virtuous Dispositions and Reason, this they cultivate, and are wholly governed by. Neither does Reason there require any Solution, as among us, but strikes with Conviction at once, as it always must, when uncompounded with Passion or Interest. Controversies are unknown among the *Houyhnhnms*; and I re-

remember, it was with extreme Difficulty, that I made my Master understand the Meaning of the Word (*Opinion*) because he said, Reason taught us to affirm or deny only what we were certain of. In like manner, when I explained our Systems of Natural Philosophy, he laugh'd to find rational Creatures value themselves upon a Knowledge, which, if certain, could be of no Use; wherein he agreed with the Sentiments of *Socrates*. And I have often since reflected what Havock such a Doctrine would make in the *European* Libraries, and what Paths to Fame would be shut up by it in the learned World. Friendship and Benevolence are the two principal Virtues of the *Houyhnhnms*, which extend to all Strangers as well as Neighbours. They observe *Decency* without *Ceremony*. They have no greater Fondness for their own Colts, than those of their Neighbours; but the Care taken in their Education proceeds from the Dictates of *Reason*. And say that *Nature* teaches them to love the whole Species, and it is *Reason* only that maketh the Distinction of Persons, where they excel in Virtue. When the Matron *Houyhnhnms* have had one of each Sex, they leave the Company of their Consorts. This Caution is necessary, to prevent the Country from being too numerous. But the inferior Race are allowed to produce three of each Sex, to serve as Domesticks to the superior. In their Marriages, they take
strict

strict Care to preserve the Beauty and Comeliness of the Breed from degenerating, by chusing such Colours as will not make a disagreeable Mixture. They have no Terms to express Love, Presents, or Jointure, but are joined by the mutual Consent of their Parents and Friends. This they reckon as one of the necessary Actions of a rational Being: And the married Pair pass their Lives in mutual Friendship and Benevolence, which they bear to all others of the Species, without Jealousy or Discontent. The Method of educating their Youth is admirable. They are not suffered to eat Oats, unless upon certain Days, till they are Eighteen Years old, or Milk but rarely; they graze two Hours Morning and Evening with their Parents, and the Servants but an Hour, having their Grass brought home to eat at their leisure Time. *Temperance, Industry, Exercise, and Cleanliness*, are equally enjoin'd them; and my Master thought it absurd in us to give the two Sexes different Education, whereby one Half of our Natives were good for nothing but bringing Children into the World. But the *Houyhnhnms* train up their Youth in Exercise, by running Races up and down steep Hills, and hard stony Grounds. Four times a Year, the Youth meet to shew their Proficiency in Running and Leaping. On this Festival, a Herd of *Taboo's* are driven into the Field, laden with Provisions for the *Houyhnhnms*, but are unloaded,

loaded, and sent back again immediately, for fear of being noisome to the Company. Every fourth Year, at the vernal Equinox, there is a Representative Council of the whole Nation, who enquire into the State and Condition of each District, with respect to Necessaries; and where there is a Want, it is immediately supplied by voluntary Contribution. Here the Regulation of Children is settled. As for Instance, a *Houyhnhnm* who hath two Males exchanges one for a Female; and when a Child hath been lost, and the Mother past Breeding, it is determined what Family shall breed another, to supply the Defect.

CH A P. IX.

A grand Debate at the General Assembly, and how it was determin'd. The Learning of the Houyhnhnms. Their Buildings, manner of Burials. The Deficiency of their Language.

NE of these Assemblies was held in my Time, whither my Master went, as Representative of our District. In this the old Debate was revived, which was the only one ever known in the Country; whereof my Master gave me a very particular Account. The Question was, Whether the *Taboo's* should be exterminated from the

Face

Face of the Earth? One of the Members brought many Arguments for the Affirmative, alledging, that the Filthiness, Deformity, and Malice of that Animal, was unsupportable: That they privately suck'd their Cows, and destroy'd their Oats and Grass, with a Thousand other Inconveniencies. He observed, that *Yaboo's* had not been always in that Country: That the two first were discovered upon a Mountain, but whether produced from Mud, or the Trash of the Sea, was never known. That these propagated the Species, till the whole Country became so infested with them, that a general Hunting was made, to destroy the old ones, and every *Houyhnhnm*, after that, kept two young ones, and tamed them for his own Use. That it seemed true, that these Creatures could not be *Ylnbniamshy*, (or *Aborigines* of the Land) from the natural Hatred the *Houyhnhnms* bore to them. That the Inhabitants, to take the *Yaboo's* into their Service, had neglected the Breeding of Asses, which, tho' not so active an Animal, was more comely, and less offensive; and if their Braying be no agreeable Sound, it is preferable to the Howlings of the *Yaboo's*. Several others spoke to the same Purpose, when my Master, who had borrowed the Hint from me, proposed an Expedient. He agreed in the Tradition which that *Honourable Member* mentioned who spoke before, and affirmed, that the two *Yaboo's* first

H S

first seen were driven over-sea, and being forsaken by their Companions, retired to the Mountains, and have since degenerated from their original Species. The Reason of his Assertion was founded upon his having a wonderful *Tahoo*, which most of them had heard of, and many of them had seen. He then related how he found me, and described my Covering, with what Particulars I discover'd to him of my self, and Customs of my own Country; and that, among the rest, I mentioned a Custom of *Castrating* the *Houyhnhnms* when they were young; that it was easily performed, and he thought it no Shame to learn Wisdom from Brutes. That, in the mean time, the Breed of Asses should be cultivated, which are more comely, and fit for Service seven Years younger. This was all he thought proper to tell me, and concealed one Particular, the unhappy Effect of which was the Cause of my succeeding Misfortunes. The *Houyhnhnms* have no Letters, and consequently their Knowledge is all Traditional, which, from the Paucity of Events, and prudent Government of the People, is easily preserved, without being a Burthen to the Memory. I have before said, that they were subject to no Disease. They are, however, provided with excellent Compositions for the Cure of accidental Hurts in any Part of the Body. They calculate Time by the Revolution of the two Luminaries, and the Know-

ledg

ledge of their Eclipses is the utmost Progress in Astronomy. In Poetry they must be allowed to excel all other Mortals, in Justness of Similies, and Beauty in Descriptions. The Topicks are generally Friendship and Benevolence, or the Praises of Victors in Races, and other bodily Exercises. Their Buildings, tho' rough and simple, are contrived to keep them from the Injuries of the Weather. They are made of a sort of Tree which grows sharp pointed, and falls at the End of Forty Years by the least Storm. These they stick into the Ground about ten Inches asunder, and weave Wattles and Oat Straw between. The Roof and Doors are made after the same manner. The *Houyhnhnms* use the Hollow of their Fore-feet between the Pastern and the Hoof, with that Dexterity, as to be able to thread a Needle. This I saw a white Mare of our Family do with a Needle and Thread I lent her on Purpose. They milk their own Cows, and make their own Tools out of a kind of Flint Stones, with which they cut their Corn, and do every other Part of Husbandry necessary in that Country. The *Yahoos* draw home the Sheafs upon Carriages, and the Servants trample out the Grain, which they afterwards dry in the Sun. The Natives of this Country, if they can avoid Casualties, die only of old Age, and are buried in the obscurest Places, without any Grief of their Relations at their Departure, nor doth the dying

dying Person discover the least Regret at his leaving the World. My Master once invited a Friend and his Family to his House, and on the Day fixed, the Mistress and her Children coming late, she excused her self, and said, that her Husband happened to *shnuwnk*, (that signifies to retire to his first Mother) that Morning, and it was a long time before her Servants could find a convenient Place to bury him, and behaved her self at our House as chearfully as the rest. They generally live to be Seventy, or Seventy Five at most, and perceive a gradual Decay several Weeks before they die, during which Time, they are visited by their Friends, and about ten Days before Death, they return the Visits to the nearest in the Neighbourhood, in a Sledge drawn by *Yahoo's*, and take a solemn Leave of their Neighbours with their usual Ease and Satisfaction. It may be worth observing, that the *Houyhnhnms* have no Word to express any thing evil but what comes from the ill Qualities of the *Yahoo's*; and they denote every Fault of a Child, or Omission of a Servant, by adding the Epichet *Yahoo*. For Instance, *hbnm Yahoo Wbnabohm Yahoo Ynlhnmndwihlma Yahoo*; and an ill contrived House, *Yabohmbnmrohlaw Yahoo*. I could enlarge farther upon the Manners and Virtue of this People, but shall refer the Reader to a Volume I shall publish on that Subject, and proceed to relate my sad *Gata-
prophs*.

CHAP. X.

The Author's Œconomy, and happy Life among the Houghnhnms. His Improvement in Virtue by conversing with them. Their Conversations. The Author's Master gives him Notice to depart the Country. He swoons away with Grief, but submits. He makes himself a Canoo, by the Help of a Fellow-servant, and puts to Sea at a Venture.

I Had settled my little Œconomy to my Heart's Content, having a Room about six Yards from the House, which I had plaister'd with Clay and Mud, to my own Fancy. I had beaten Hemp, which there grows wild, and made a sort of Tick- ing, which I stuffed with Feathers of what Birds I had taken, and made myself Chairs by the Assistance of the Sorrel Nagg. And when my Cloaths were decay'd, I supply'd them with the Skins of Rabbits, and those of a small Animal call'd *Nnubnob* which is very soft. I soal'd my Shoes with Wood, and when it was worn out, supply'd it with the Skins of *Yaboo's* dried in the Sun. I often got Honey out of hollow Trees, which I mix'd with Water, and eat with my Bread. I enjoy'd a perfect Health of Body, and tranquillity of Mind, free from the Inconstancy of

of a Friend, or Injury of an Enemy. I wanted no Flattery to court the Great, no Fence against Fraud or Oppression. Here was no Physician to destroy my Body, or Lawyer to ruin my Fortune; no Highwaymen, Gamesters, or Murderers, no Pride or Affectation; no Drunkard, no Whores, or Poxes; no lew'd expensive Wives, no noisy ranting Bullies, no Scoundrels raised from Nothing by their Vices; no Lords, Fiddlers, Judges, or Dancing-Masters. I had the Favour of being admitted into the Room, when there was Company, some of whom would often ask me Questions, which I thought was Time lost to answer, being highly delighted with their Conversations, which were short, but very significant, and the strictest Decency observed without Compliment. Their Subjects are Friendship and Benevolence, Order and Œconomy, and sometimes the visible Operations of Nature, or Tradition, upon Virtue, or the unerring Rules of Reason, and sometimes upon Poetry. I may own without Vanity, that my Presence often afforded Matter of Discourse, by my Master's telling his Friends the History of me and my Country, which they commented upon not to my Advantage. I freely confess, the most useful Knowledge I ever acquired, was from these Conversations, and would sooner listen to them, than dictate to the wisest Assembly in *Europe*. I admired their Strength and Comeliness, and had the Greatest Veneration

ration for their Virtues. At first, I did not feel that natural Awe which other Animals bore to them, which increased so at last, that I was pleased they would distinguish me from the rest of my Species. When I thought of my Countrymen, I considered them as *Yaboo's* indued with Speech, but making no other Use of Reason, than to multiply and improve their Vices. If I chanced to see myself in a Lake or Fountain, I started back with Horror and Detestation of my self, and could sooner bear the Sight of a common *Yaboo*. I was so delighted with the *Houyhnhnms*, that I began to imitate their Gait, and have so long uled it, that my Friends tell me I *trot like a Horse*, which I take for a great Compliment, and shall not disown, that, in Speaking, I am apt to fall into their Voice and Manner, and hear myself ridiculed without the least Mortification. In the midst of this Happiness, when I thought myself settled for Life, my Master sent for me one Morning, and observing some Perplexity in his Countenance, after a short Silence, he told me, that in the last general Assembly, it was taken as an Offence that he should keep a *Yaboo* (meaning myself) in his Family more like a *Houyhnhnm* than a Brute, and suffer him to converse with him; that it was unreasonable, and what was never heard of before. That they did therefore exhort him to employ me like the rest, or command me
to

to swim back from whence I came. That the first Proposal was rejected, because, as I had some Rudiments of Reason, I might be able to seduce those Animals into the Mountains, and bring them in Troops by Night, to destroy the Cattle. He added, that he was daily pressed to put this *Exhortation* in Execution, and could defer it no longer; and therefore wished I would think of some Contrivance which would carry me Over-sea. He concluded, by saying, he would have kept me as long as I had lived, because I had cured myself of several bad Dispositions since I had been among the *Houyhnhnms*. I should here observe to the Reader, that a Decree of the General Assembly is call'd *Hnbloayn*, signifying an Exhortation; for they argue, that a rational Creature can only be adviled or exhorted, since no Person can disobey Reason, without quitting his Claim to Rationality. My Master's Discourse struck me with such unsupportable Grief, that I fainted at his Feet, which made him conclude I was dead. When I recovered myself, I answered in a faint Voice, that Death would have been too great a Happiness. That altho' I could not blame the Assembly's *Exhortation*, yet I thought it might have been less rigorous. That I could not swim far, and many Materials would be wanting to make me a Vessel, and therefore concluded myself devoted to Destruction. That the Prospect of Death was the least Evil; for
should

should I, by some extraordinary Fortune, save my Life, how could I think of living among *Yahoo's*, and relapse into former Corruptions, for want of Examples of Virtue. That I knew the Assembly would not be prevail'd upon by my weak Reasons, and therefore, after returning my humble Thanks for the Offer of his Servants to assist me, in making a Vessel, and desiring a reasonable Time, I told him I would endeavour to preserve myself; and that if ever I saw my Native Country, I would be of use to my own Species, in proposing the Virtues of the *Houyhnhnms*, as a Pattern to Mankind. He answered me very graciously, and allow'd me two Months to finish my Boat, which I afterward compassed in Six-Weeks, by the Assistance of the *Sorrel Nagg*. In his Company, I went first to the Shore, where my rebellious Crew had left me, whence looking on every Side into the Sea, I descry'd an Island with my Pocket-glass, toward the East, which I computed to be about five Leagues off, which Place I resolv'd should be the first of my Banishment, let the Consequence be as it would. We finished a sort of *Indian Canoo*, and covered it over with *Yahoo's* Skins stitch'd together with Thread of my own making. The Sails were of the Skins of the youngest of those Animals, and I was provided likewise with four Paddles, and laid in Stock of boyl'd Rabbits, and Fowls, with two Vessels, one fill'd with Milk,

Milk, and the other with Water. I tried my Canoo in a large Pond near my Master's House, and made it staunch. It was afterwards drawn to the Sea-side on a Carriage, by *Taboo's*, under the Conduct of the Sorrel Nagg and another Servant. When the Day appointed for my Departure was come, I took leave of my Master and his Family, with the greatest Grief imaginable. But his Honour having the Curiosity to see me in my Canoo, got some Friends to accompany him. I waited above an Hour for the Tide, and then observing the Wind bearing towards the Island, to which I intended to steer my Course, I took a second Leave of my Master, and paid my Respects to the rest of the *Houyhnhnms*; then getting into my Canoo, I pushed off from the Shore.



C H A P. XI.

The Author's dangerous Voyage. He arrives in New Holland, with Hopes to settle there. Is wounded with an Arrow by one of the Natives. Is seized, and forced on board a Portuguese Ship. The Civilities of the Captain. The Author comes to England.

IBegan this desperate Voyage on the 15th of February 1714-15, and the Wind being favourable, I set up my small Sail, by the help of which, and the Tide, I went at the Rate of a League and half an Hour. My Master and his Company continued on the Shore, till I was almost out of Sight, and I often heard my Friend the sorrel Nagg crying out in his own Language, *Take care of thy self, gentle Yahoo.* The terrible Idea I conceived of returning home, to live under the Government of Yahoo's, made me resolve to land on the first uninhabited Island I could discover, and there seek Necessaries of Life, considering that in this Solitude, I could reflect on the Virtues of the *Houyhnhnms*, without the Danger of falling into the Corruptions of my own Species. The Reader may remember, that when I was set on Shore by my rebellious Crew, they solemnly swore they knew not in what part
of

of the World we were; however, from what I over-heard among them, I believed we were about ten Degrees southward of the *Cape of Good Hope*; and altho' this was little more than Conjecture, I resolved to steer my Course Eastward, the Wind being full West. By Six in the Evening, I had gone about Eighteen Leagues Eastward, when I spied a small Island, which I soon reach'd, and discovered it to be only a Rock with one Creek. I put in my Canoo, and climbing up a part of the Rock, could discover Land extending from South to North. I lay all Night in my Canoo, and continued my Voyage next Morning, till I came to the South-East Point of *New Holland*. I saw no Inhabitants where I landed, and being unarmed, was afraid to venture far into the Country. Here I continued three Days, living upon Shell-fish to save my Provisions, and fortunately met with good Water. On the fourth Day, venturing a little too far, I saw several of the Natives, Men, Women, and Children, stark naked round a Fire. One of them spy'd me, and gave Notice to the rest; five of them advancing toward me, I hasted to my Canoo, and shoved off, but before I could get far enough, one of them let flye an Arrow which wounded me on the Inside my left Knee, which I dressed as well as I could, when I had paddled out of their Reach. The Wind being against me, I was at a loss what to do, for

for I durst not venture to the same landing Place. As I was looking about, I saw a Sail to the North North East, and was in doubt, whether I should wait for them or no; but my Detestation of the *Yaboo* Race prevailing, I turn'd my Canoo, and got into the Creek, from whence I set out that Morning, and hid myself behind a Stone near a Brook. The Ship came within half a League of the Creek, and sent out her Long-boat to take in fresh Water. The Seamen found my Canoo, and looking about for the Owner, at last found me lying on my Face behind the Stone. They gazed a while with Admiration at the Oddness of my Habit; at length one of the Seamen, in *Portuguese*, bid me to rise, and ask'd who I was. I understood him, and rising up, said, I was a poor *Yaboo* banished from the *Houyhnhnms*, and desired they would give me my Liberty. They admired at my answering in their own Language, but wondered what I meant by *Yaboo's* and *Houyhnhnms*, and laughed to hear me speak in a Tone like the Neighing of a Horse. I trembled with Fear and Hatred, and offer'd to get to my Canoo, but they laid hold of me, and asked what Countryman I was. I told them I was an *Englishman*, and a poor *Yaboo*, seeking some Place to pass the Remainder of his unfortunate Life. When they began to talk, I thought nothing appeared more unnatural, and the honest *Portuguese* were

were equally amazed at my Manner of uttering my Words. They spoke with much Humanity, and said they would send two of the Crew back to the Ship, to receive the Captain's Orders; and unless I gave them my Oath not to flye, would secure me by Force. I comply'd, and in two Hours the Boat return'd with the Captain's Orders to bring me on board. I begg'd for my Liberty, but in vain; and the Men having tied me with Cords, carried me on board the Ship into the Captain's Cabbin. The Captain, whose Name was *Pedro de Mendez*, used me very courteously, and offered me his Provisions, and what the Ship afforded, in Terms so obliging, that I wondered to find so much Civility from a *Tahoo*. However, I remained silent and sullen, and was ready to faint at the Smell of the Men. At last, I desired something to eat out of my own Canoo; but he ordered me a Chicken and a Bottle of Wine, and then to be put to Bed in a clean Cabbin. I would not undress my self, but lay down on the Bed-Cloaths, and getting up when I thought the Crew was at Dinner, I resolved to leap into the Sea, and swim for my Life, sooner than live among *Tahoo's*, but was prevented by one of the Men, and afterwards chained to my Cabbin. The Captain came to me, and desired to know the Reason of so desperate an Attempt, assuring me he was ready to do me all the Service in his Power.

I gave

I gave him a short Account of my Voyage, and my Three Years Residence among the *Houyhnhnms*: All which he looked upon as a Dream, at which I took great Offence, and asked him, if it was the Custom in his Country, to *say the thing which was not*? and assured him I had almost forgot what Falshood meant, and was indifferent whether he believed me, or no. But however, in Return for his Favours, I would give so much Allowance to the Corruption of his Nature, as to answer any Objection he would make. The Captain, who endeavoured to catch me in some Part of my Story, at last began to alter his Opinion; and the rather, because he had been informed by a *Dutch Skipper*, who had been ashore upon a Continent South of *New Holland*, that he had observed a Horse driving before him several Animals resembling those I had described; and added, that since I profess'd so inviolable an Attachment to Truth, I must give him my Word and Honour, not to attempt any thing against my own Life, or else he would continue me a Prisoner till we came to *Lisbon*. I gave him my Promise, protesting at the same time, that I would undergo the greatest Hardships, rather than return to live among *Tahoo's*. We had a prosperous Voyage, during which, in Gratitude to the Captain. I concealed, as well as I could, my Antipathy to human Kind, and passed the greatest Part of my Time in my Cabbin,

Cabbin, to avoid seeing the Crew. He often entreated me, to throw off my Savage Dress, and would have lent me the best Suit of Cloaths he had; but I abhorred to cover myself with what had been upon the Back of a *Yaboo*, and only desired him to lend me two clean Shirts, and these I took care to wash myself, when they were dirty. We arrived at *Lisbon*, Nov. 5. 1715. At our landing, the Captain forced me to cover myself with his Cloak, to avoid the Importunities of the Rabble, and convey'd me to his own House, and, at my Request, led me to the highest Room backwards. I conjured him to conceal the Story I had related, lest I should be in Danger of Imprisonment, or burnt by the *Inquisition*. The Captain perswaded me at length to accept of a new Suit of Cloaths, and other Necessaries, which I aired for twenty four Hours, before I would use them. The Captain's Family consisted only of himself, and three Servants, who were suffered to wait at Table, and his whole Deportment was so obliging, that I really began to tolerate his Company. He gain'd so far upon me, first by looking at the Window, then at the Door, that my Terror gradually decreased, and at last I was bold enough to accompany him into the Street, having my Nose well stopp'd with Rue or Tobacco. In ten Days, *Don Pedro*, whom I had acquainted with my Affairs, put it upon a Matter of Honour and

Con-

Conscience, that I should go and live with my Wife and Children, and told me there was an *English* Ship in the Port ready to sail: And added, it was impossible to find such an Island as I desired to live in: But I might pass my Time as I pleased at my own House. I comply'd, and left *Lisbon* the 24th of *November*. *Don Pedro* accompanied me to the Ship, and lent me Twenty Pounds to bear my Expenses. On the 5th of *December* 1715, we arrived in the *Downs*, and the same Day I got safe to *Rotherhithe*. My Wife and Family received me with exceeding Joy; and as soon as I entered the House, my Wife took me in her Arms, and kissed me; but not being used to the Touch of such odious Animals, I fell in a Swoon. It is now five Years since my Return, and during the first Year, I could not endure the Presence of my Wife or Children. To this Hour they dare not presume to touch my Bread, or drink out of my Cup. The first Money I laid out, was to buy two young Stone-Horses, which I keep in a Stable, free from Bridle or Saddle. These and the Groom are my greatest Favourites, and they live in great Amity with me, and Friendship to each other.

C H A P. XII

The Author's Veracity. His Design in publishing this Work. His Censure of Travellers who swerve from Truth. The Author clears himself from any sinister End in Writing. An Objection answered. The Method of planting Colonies. His native Country commended. The Right of the Crown to those Countries described by the Author is justified. The Difficulty of conquering them. The Author takes Leave of the Reader, proposeth his manner of Living for the future, gives good Advice, and concludes.



THUS I have given the Reader a faithful History of my Travels, without astonishing him with strange improbable Tales, my Design being more to inform than amuse, in which I think I have answered the true End of a Traveller. I could heartily wish a Law was created, to oblige every Traveller, before he published his Voyages, to make Oath before the Lord High Chancellor, that all he intended to print was absolutely true, to the best of his Knowledge, which would effectually prevent the Imposition of gross Falsities on the Reader. I have perused several Books of Travels, but since I have been able to contradict their Accounts

by

by my own Observations, it has increased my Indignation to see the Credulity of Mankind so abused. Therefore, since my Friends have thought my Endeavours might be acceptable to Mankind, I made this a Maxim, that I would strictly adhere to Truth, neither can I vary from it, as long as I retain the excellent Lectures of the virtuous *Houyhnhns*. I know the Fate of Travels is like that of Dictionaries, sunk into Oblivion by the Weight and Bulk of those who come after, and therefore lye uppermost. And it is highly probable, that those who visit the Countries I have describ'd may make such Additions, as will jostle me out of Vogue, and make the World forget I was ever an Author. This would be a Mortification indeed, if I wrote for Fame; but as I intended only the publick Good, I can't be altogether disappointed. For who can read of the *Houyhnhns* Virtues, without being ashamed of his own Vices? I shall say nothing of those Nations governed by *Yahoo's*, among which the least corrupted are the *Brobdignagians*, whose Maxims in Morality and Government it would be our Happiness to observe. I am pleased, to think that this Work of mine can't possibly meet with Censure, since I relate only Matters of Fact which happened in foreign Countries, where we have no Interest whatever. I have avoided the common Faults of Writers of Travels, and have meddled with no *Party*, but write

for the noble End of instructing Mankind, to
 so which I think I may claim a Superiority,
 y^e from the Advantages I received by conversing
 s with the excellent *Houyhnhnms*. I never suf-
 fer a Word to pass, that may give the least
 s Offence; so that I may, in Justice think my
 self secure against the Tribes of Reflecters or
 g Observers. I confess it was whispered to me,
 39 that I was bound in Duty, as a Subject of
 30 *England*, to present a Memorial to the Secre-
 tary of State, because whatever Lands are
 discovered by a Subject, belong to the Crown.
 But I question whether it would be worth
 while to subdue the *Lilliputians*, or prudent
 to attempt the *Brobdinagians*, or whether an
English Army would be safe with a Flying
 Island over their Heads. The *Houyhnhnms*
 indeed are not so well prepared for War, but
 I should never give my Advice for invading
 them, were I a Minister of State; but should
 rather wish they were in a Capacity or Dis-
 position to send a sufficient Number of their
 Inhabitants, to teach us the Principles of Ho-
 nour, Truth, Temperance, Benevolence and
 Fidelity; the Names of which Virtues are
 still retained among us in some modern, as
 well as ancient Authors. But I had another
 Reason, which made me less forward to en-
 large his Majesty's Dominions by my Disco-
 very. To tell the Truth, I was scrupulous
 with relation to the distributive Justice of
 Princes in this Case. For Instance, a Crew
 of

of Pirates are driven by Storm, they know not
 whether; they discover Land, and go on
 Shore to rob and plunder; they are kindly
 entertained by the harmless People, give a
 new Name to the Country, and take formal
 Possession of it for the King, and set up a
 rotten Plank, or a Stone for a Memorial.
 They murder some of the Natives, and bring
 two or three home for a Sample, and get
 their Pardon. And here is the beginning of
 a new Dominion acquired with a Title of *di-
 vine Right*. Ships are sent, and the Inhabi-
 tants are butcher'd, and Princes tortured to
 discover their Gold; and this execrable Crew
 is a *Modern Colony*, sent to convert and civi-
 lize an idolatrous and barbarous People. But
 this Description does by no means affect the
English Nation, who may be an Example to
 the World for their Care in planting Colo-
 nies, and sending able Pastors to propagate
 Christianity, and supplying all their Colonies
 with virtuous Governours, and worthy Offi-
 cers, for the Administration of Justice. But
 as the Countries I have described do not a-
 bound with Silver, Gold, or Tobacco, I
 humbly conceive they are not proper Objects
 of our Valour. However, when I am law-
 fully call'd, I shall be ready to depose, that no
European did ever visit these Countries, before
 me, if the Inhabitants may be credited: Un-
 less a Dispute may arise about the two *Raboo's*
 found upon the Mountain in *Houyhnhnmland*;

and these I am apt to suspect were *English*, having some Lines of their Posterity's Countenances not thoroughly defaced. But how far this will make a Title, I leave to the Learned in Colony Law. Having thus answered all that can be objected against me as a Traveller, I shall take my Leave of the courteous Reader, and enjoy my own Speculations in my little Garden at *Rotherhithe*, and instruct the *Tahoo's* of my own Family in the Virtues of the *Houyhnhnms*, and habituate myself by Degrees to human Creatures, and lament the Brutality of our *Houyhnhnms*, but always treat them with respect for the Resemblance they bear to my noble Master and his Family. I began last Week to suffer my Wife to dine with me; yet the Smell of a *Tahoo* being still offensive to me, I keep my Nose stop'd with some sweet Herb or Tobacco, and hope in time to suffer a Neighbour *Tahoo* in my Company, without Apprehensions from his Teeth or Claws. My Reconcilement to the *Tahoo's* would be more easy, if they would be content with those Vices and Follies only which Nature hath entitl'd them to. I am not in the least provok'd at the sight of a Lawyer or a Physician: But when I behold a deform'd Lump smitten with Pride, my Patience is gone, being unable to comprehend how such an Animal, and such a Vice can tally together. The *Houyhnhnms*, who abound in all Excellencies,

cellencies, have no Name in their Language for this Vice, neither can they distinguish it among the detestable Qualities of their *Tahoo's*, for want of understanding human Nature; but I who had more Experience, could observe some Rudiments of it among the wild *Tahoo's*. But the *Houyhnhnms*, who are governed by Reason, possess their good Qualities, without more Pride than I should have for not wanting a Limb, which no Man would boast of, altho' he must be miserable without them. I dwell the longer upon this Subject, being desirous to make the Society of an *English Tahoo* less unsupportable; and therefore desire all those touch'd with this Vice to keep out of my Sight.

F I N I S.







*B O O K S Printed for, and Sold by
R. KING, at the Prince's Arms in
St. Paul's Church-yard.*

I. **T**HE Life and surprizing Adventures of Major *Alexander Ramkins*, an *Highland* Officer: Being an Account of several remarkable Adventures, during about Twenty Eight Years Service in *Scotland*, *Germany*, *Italy*, *Flanders*, and *Ireland*, from the Battle of *Gillicrankie*, fought between the two *Highland* Generals, the Lord Viscount *Dundee* and *Mackay*, to the Death of King *James II.* Being a very agreeable and instructive Lesson of human Life, both in a publick and private Capacity. Together with the Promise the late *French King* made to King *James* on his Death-Bed. The Second Edition. Price 1 s. 6 d.

2. The

B O O K S Printed for

2. The Art of Practical Measuring easily performed by a Two-foot Rule, which slides to a Foot, on which is the best Measure of all Sorts of Timber the common way; also Stone, Board, Glass, Paving, Painting, Wainscot, &c. Gauging of Casks, and Inching of Tuns: Containing Instructions in Decimal Arithmetick, the best way of using the Logarithms according to Mr. Townley, the Use of a New Diagonal Scale, and of Hundred Parts in a Quarter of an Inch, applied to Gunter's Chain: And lastly, some useful Directions in Dialling, not hitherto published. The Third Edition corrected. By Henry Coggeshall, Gent. Price 1 s. 6 d.

3. Astronomy; or, The true System of the Planets demonstrated: Likewise the Places of the heavenly Bodies, and Motion of the Earth, are not only shewn, but plainly and succinctly demonstrated to the truest Capacity, by short and easy Rules, and new Astronomical Tables; with the Places of 130 principal fixed Stars, 33 of which lye in the Moon's way; designed as a Help to discover the Longitude at Sea. To which is prefix'd,
An

RICHARD KING, &c.

An Alphabetical Catalogue of as many Terms in Astronomy as are most useful and necessary to be understood. A Work entirely new, and in a Method hitherto unattempted. By *Charles Ledbetter*, Teacher of the Mathematicks. Price 5 s.

4. *The Last Day*, a Poem, in Twelve Books, by *J. Bulkeley*, Esq; late of *Clare-hall* in *Cambridge*. Price 4 s. 6 d.

5. A Collection of the Ancient Liturgies, with a Dissertation upon them, shewing their Usefulness and Authority, and pointing out their several Corruptions and Interpolations. By *Thomas Brett*, LL.D. Price 6 s.

6. A Practical Exposition of the Book of Common Prayer; shewing, that it is agreeable to the Primitive Usage; and likewise, that it is a reasonable Service. By *Anthony*, late Lord Bishop of *Norwich*; with his Caution to his Diocese against false Doctrines. The Seventh Edition. Price 2 s. 6 d.

The Modern Protestant: Or, An Essay to set up a new Church, and a new Religion. The Second Edition. Price 1 s.

RICHARD KING, &c.

An Alphabetical Catalogue of as many
Terms in Astronomy as are most useful
and necessary to be understood. A Work
entirely new, and in a Manner hitherto
unattempted. By Thomas Digges, a
Teacher of the Mathematics in the
a. The Last Day, a Poem in Twelve
Books, by J. Baskerville, Esq. last of Claver-
hall in Cambridge. Price 4s. 6d.
b. A Collection of the Ancient Latin
Epic, with a Dissertation upon them
showing their Utensils and Author-
ity, and pointing out their several Cor-
ruptions and Interpolations. By Thomas
Barn, M.D. Price 4s.
c. A Practical Exposition of the Book
of Common Prayer; shewing that it
is agreeable to the Primitive Usage;
and likewise, that it is a reasonable Ser-
vice. By Thomas, the Lord Bishop of
Aberdeen, with an Addition to his Dis-
course, by the Rev. Mr. J. S. Price.
The Method of Teaching the
Lovers of a new Country, and a new
Region. The second Edition. Price 1s.